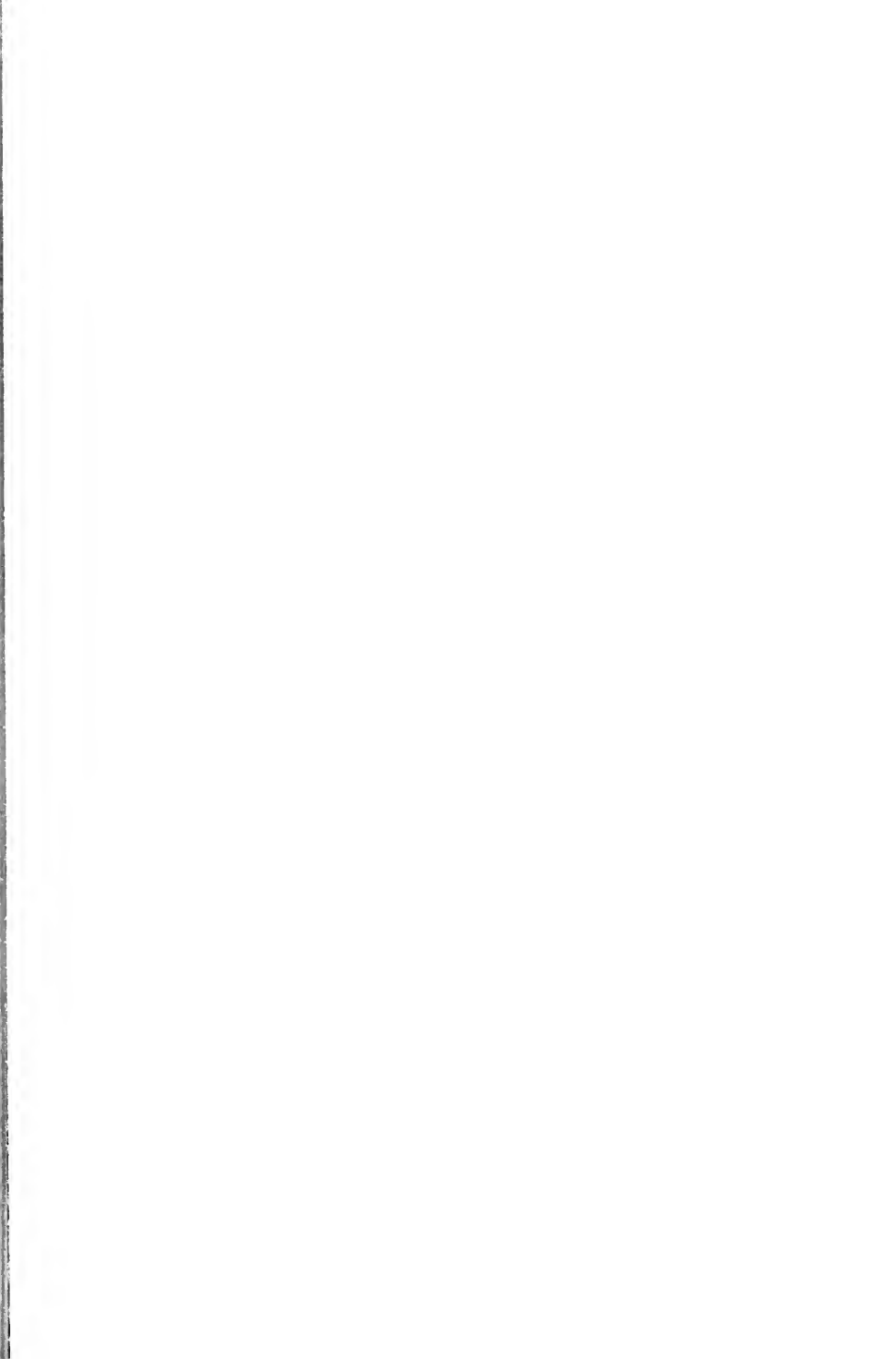


UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO



3 1761 00594950 8

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2008 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation



13

315

587

THE TUDOR
TRANSLATIONS

EDITED BY

W. E. HENLEY

XIX

CERTAIN
TRAGICAL DISCOURSES OF
BANDELLO

TRANSLATED INTO ENGLISH BY
GEFFRAIE FENTON

ANNO 1567

With an Introduction by
ROBERT LANGTON DOUGLAS

VOLUME I

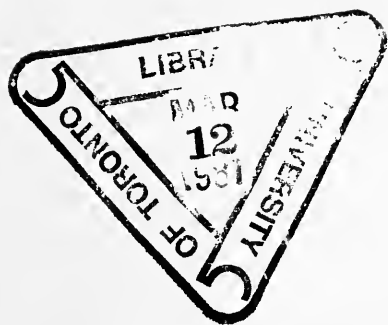


LONDON

Published by DAVID NUTT
IN THE STRAND

1898

7 16 26
10 | 5 1 9 8



PQ
4606
Z34
1898
V.1

TO
GEORGE MEREDITH
THESE ESSAYS IN AN ART
WHEREIN HIS ACHIEVEMENT
HAS MADE HIM
ILLUSTRIOUS



INTRODUCTION

I



VASARI, in a well-known passage, tells the story of the artistic awakening of the young Niccolò Pisano. The youth, he says, was at work one day in the Duomo at Pisa, when his attention was arrested by certain pieces of antique sculpture, 'spoils of marbles,' which the Pisan fleet

had brought from Greece. It was, he would have us believe, the contemplation of these works of long-dead masters that led the sculptor's apprentice to become the exponent of a new manner in art, the inaugurator of a great artistic movement.

Modern critics have laboriously demonstrated the improbability of this story. They have shown that there are strong reasons for believing that it is one of those myths that owe their preservation to the credulity of the Aretine artist. And yet, whether it be a myth or not, it enshrines an eternal truth. In the form of allegory, it describes a natural process which is continually being repeated in the history of human civilisation; and, whatever its origin

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

INTRO- may be, it is of value as a representation of what actually
DUCTION occurred in Italy in the course of the three centuries that
followed the birth of the Pisan sculptor.

The
Renaissance

That great movement of human thought which we call the Renaissance had, as has often been explained, a dual character. It consisted both of a return to antiquity and a return to nature. The one movement was the necessary outcome of the other. The inevitable effect of the intelligent contemplation of the rediscovered works of classical antiquity upon the men of that age, was that it filled them with an insatiable curiosity, a consuming thirst for new knowledge. For it is a function of the true artist to 'plant eyes' in men, to stimulate their powers of observation by revealing to them, here and there, things hitherto unperceived by them, and, at the same time, to fill them with a desire to put to test the new capacities with which, through his instrumentality, they have become endowed.

Insatiable
curiosity of
the men of
Renaissance

In Italy at the time of the Renaissance, this phenomenon was to be seen everywhere. Men went out from libraries and museums to look upon the world with new eyes, to discover there, not only things which their dead teachers had taught them to see, but much also that the sculptors and poets of Greece and Rome were themselves incapable of perceiving. And in regard to nothing did these men of the Renaissance display a more avid curiosity than about man himself. Not only were they eager to learn all that it was possible to know about the personages of classical antiquity; they were anxious, also, to view the men around them as they really were, and not in relation to an ecclesiastical system. They were especially interested in all

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

exhibitions of that quality of 'virtue' which the study of the classics had taught them to prize. INTRO-
DUCTION

Full of the inspiration of new ideas, with new senses 'Virtue' opened to them, painters and poets, historians and diarists, physiologists and philosophers, dramatists and novelists, sought to express what they saw and felt, and to satisfy in some measure the cravings of their fellow-countrymen. Of all these classes of workers, none appealed to a larger audience than the *novellieri*. In every town in Italy there sprang up writers who professed to relate stories of real life; and, everywhere, their works were eagerly read by the people. The *novellieri*

As the movement of the Renaissance spread, the same insatiable curiosity began to show itself on all sides, with the result that the *novelle* of Italy soon found countless readers in France, and Spain, and England. Most of Bandello's tales were rendered into French by François de Belleforest, and his collection of *Histoires Tragiques* passed through many editions. Geoffrey Fenton, William Painter, and other Elizabethans translated these novels out of French into English, and in Ascham's day volumes of Italian love-stories were to be found 'in every shop in London,' where they commanded a ready sale. François de
Belleforest

Geoffrey
Fenton and
William
Painter

They at once exercised a profound effect upon the development of our dramatic literature. It was not merely that the dramatists found in them suitable material for romantic tragedy. To the Italian novelists they owed a deeper debt than that. The contemplation of these vivid pictures of the free and passionate life of the Italians strangely stirred their senses, and made their sluggish Northern blood course more quickly through their veins. Our debt to
the *novellieri*

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

INTRO-
DUCTION

In reading the *novelle* they became filled with a sense of the vast and terrible possibilities of human existence which they had never known before. And thus, ultimately, a powerful stimulus was given to the imaginative reason. Nay, more! these volumes of novels, finding their way into every house, helped to prepare an audience for the dramatists. Thus it was that the *novella*, which, as Symonds says, 'struck the keynote of the Renaissance in Italy,' had so potent an influence on the most characteristic product of the English Renaissance—the Elizabethan drama.

Matteo
Bandello

Amongst the *novellieri* of the *cinque-cento* Matteo Bandello stands pre-eminent. No other Italian writer of that age had a wider influence outside his own country: none was more popular amongst Englishmen. All the best stories in the second tome of Painter's *Palace of Pleasure* were taken from him, whilst Fenton's *Tragicall Discourses* is entirely composed of translations of his tales. These 'forreine reapportes' were soon known to all classes of our countrymen. Every one had heard the tragical histories of Rhomeo and Giuletta, of the Countess of Celant, and of the Duchess of Malfi.

II

Matteo Bandello was born at Castelnuovo,¹ a little town situated in a fertile plain, 'near where the Scrivia pours its limpid waters into the Po.' The air of the place, he tells us, is as temperate as in any part of Lombardy, and 'its inhabitants,' he adds, 'are remarkable for their healthiness and longevity.' He came of a noble family which claimed

¹ *Bandello*, *Novelle*, Parte prima, Novella 23. See ed. Londra (Livorno), 1791-93, vol. ii. p. 154, *et seq.*

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

descent, but apparently without sufficient reason, from a Gothic chieftain, a certain Bandelchil, a follower, it was said, of Theodoric. In the year 1495, when he was in his fifteenth year, the young Matteo was placed under the care of his uncle Vincenzo,¹ who was at that time prior of the Dominican monastery of Santa Maria delle Grazie at Milan. He was that prior, so tradition says, whose portrait Leonardo painted for the head of Judas, because of his tiresome importunity. Nevertheless, whatever his faults may have been, Vincenzo was a popular ecclesiastic, revered by the members of his order, and on terms of friendship with most of the great Italians of his time. He was distinguished both as an administrator and as a controversialist, and his treatise on the doctrine of the Immaculate Conception is still quoted by theologians.²

At Milan, Matteo found himself at once in an environment that was congenial to one of his pleasure-loving temperament. The city, at that time larger than either London or Paris, and more wealthy than any other in Italy, was the seat of the most brilliant court in Europe. Its citizens were firm believers in the precepts of 'the libertine school of Cyrene'; and, until the storm of foreign invasion scattered their *lieta brigata*, life was for them one perpetual pageant. They were for ever courting new impressions of pleasure. Rich and novel things were brought to the city from the ends of the earth, from the New World and from farthest Ind. Artists and literary men, mimes and singers, flocked thither, attracted by the munificence of that ill-fated

INTRO-
DUCTION

Vincenzo
Bandello

Bandello at
Milan

The luxurious
life of the
Milanese

¹ *Leandro Alberti*, De viris Illustribus ordinis Praedicatorum, 1517, lib. i. fol. 47, et seq.

² *Pusey*, Second Eirenicon, p. 372.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

INTRO-
DUCTION
Lodovico il
Moro

Mæcenas of the *cinque-cento*, Lodovico il Moro. Pre-eminent amongst those to whom the Duke extended his patronage was the great Leonardo himself; and with him the young Bandello became acquainted in the years 1497 and 1498, when the Master, at the bidding of il Moro, was engaged in painting his *cenacolo* in the refectory of the Dominican house.

Bandello's
descriptions
of Milanese
society

The Church of Santa Maria had been much resorted to by Beatrice d'Este; and in the month that followed her death her inconsolable husband caused a hundred torches to be kept alight there, and a hundred masses to be said for the repose of her soul. Lodovico himself was a frequent visitor at the monastery, and its prior was in high favour at court. Vincenzo's young nephew, therefore, with his agreeable manners and pleasant voice, soon became a popular figure in Milanese society. In his novels he has left us more than one picture of the free, luxurious life of the people of the city. He tells us much of their sumptuous banquets and of their trains of chariots overlaid with gold, 'worthy of an emperor's triumph.' He never tires of descanting upon the beauty of the ladies of Milan and the splendour of their apparel. 'When one of these appears at a palace door, it 'is,' he declares, 'as though one looked upon the Assumption in the city of Venice.' Moreover, these fair dames were not less complaisant than beautiful. They were, he admits, not niggardly of their charms, but rather were 'much disposed to love and to be loved.' What wonder was it, then, that the youth of the place followed the oft-quoted Horatian maxim, and gave themselves up to 'dulces amores'; riding 'on barbs and jennets splendidly caparisoned from palace to palace'; after the manner of

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

the bee that goes about from flower to flower, drawing sweetness out of loveliness? INTRO-
DUCTION

The young friar was indeed no ascetic, and it was not long before he put into practice the lessons taught in this school of Circe. It was in 1505 that Bandello first became a lover. In the summer of that year he set out for Rome, where he intended to join his uncle, who had then become General of the Dominican order. On his way thither he halted for a considerable time at Florence, staying at the Convent of Santa Maria Novella; and it was whilst he was in that city that he fell in love with a young girl named Violante, whose charms of character and person he celebrated in many sonnets. Bandello was a convinced Platonist, and it would not be fair to place too literal a construction on all the expressions to be found in his verses. Nevertheless, as he has himself told us, in one of his tales of illicit passion, that he had trodden the whole labyrinth of love, we do him no injustice in assuming that not all of his attachments were of that order popularly styled Platonic. His love for Violante was the great passion of his life. He never tired of singing of her grace and loveliness, of her rosy lips, of her fair hair, of her eyes that were like clear shining stars. 'She was so beautiful that heaven itself was jealous of her.' For one short year he enjoyed her love, and then she was suddenly taken from him.¹ But the remembrance of her beauty haunted him throughout a long life.² 'Thou

The school
of Circe

Bandello's
first love

The death of
Violante

¹ *Bandello*, Rime, tratte da un codice della R. Biblioteca di Torino, e pubblicate per la prima volta, dal Dott. L. Costa, Torino, 1816, Sonetto xxxvi. p. 56. Sonetti cx. (p. 171) and cxli. (p. 213) also have reference to Violante's illness and death.

² *Bandello*, Canti xi. de le Lodi de la S. Lucretia Gonzaga di Gazuolo, etc., Reboglio, Agen, 1545, Canto vi.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

INTRO- 'hast traversed,' he says to himself in his old age, 'many
DUCTION 'seas, countries, and rivers':

'E sempre le Viole furon teco,
Perche il tuo cor se ne portare seco.'

He was with his uncle in Calabria when the news of Violante's death reached him. The shock was so great that the young friar became seriously ill; but he revived somewhat after that his royal friend, Beatrice of Aragon, full of pity for his distress, had administered to him a crushed emerald and other costly remedies. He was still far from well when another great calamity overtook him. His uncle Vincenzo, who had been to him as a second father, died, *postquam paucis diebus agrotavit*. Robbed at once of his patron and his dear mistress, Matteo returned to Milan bearing a heavy heart in a sick body. He seems to have sought for distraction in political and literary pursuits. At any rate, in 1508 he went on a mission to the Court of France, and in the following year he published his first book, a Latin version of a novel by Boccaccio. It was not long before his fortunes again took a favourable turn. He was one of those beings to whom the capricious goddess 'displays even more than her accustomed mobility.' Now she showers upon him blow after blow. Now she makes his life all that he could wish it to be. But, on the whole, he must be regarded as singularly fortunate. He lived a variegated, dramatic life, full of incident and adventure. He was on terms of intimate friendship with the most beautiful and most cultured women of his age. He was brought into direct contact with its most notable personages, its princes and statesmen, its poets and painters,

The death
of Vincenzo
Bandello

Bandello's
first book

A favourite
of fortune

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

INTRO- DUCTION

its philosophers and *savants*, its historians and strategists, its hierarchs and heresiarchs, its buffoons and courtesans. Francis the First and Lodovico il Moro, Bembo and Castiglione, Vittoria Colonna and Margaret of Navarre, Leonardo da Vinci and Luigi Alamanni, Guicciardini and Machiavelli, Giovanni delle Bande Nere and Prospero Colonna, Isabella of Mantua and Veronica Gambara, J. C. Scaliger and Aldo Manuzio, Calcagnino and Gonnella, Isabella da Luna and Caterina di San Celso—all these knew the popular Dominican, and nearly all had the pleasure of hearing from his own lips one of his inimitable tales. ‘His whole life was a *novella*,’ a story full of life and movement.

He is especially to be envied, in that, whilst still a young man, he found what his true function was. It was a woman, an intimate friend of his, Ippolita Sforza, the wife of Alessandro Bentivoglio, and grand-niece of Lodovico il Moro, who helped him to make this discovery. Until he knew her, and for some little time after, he was regarded by the public as a brilliant young member of the order of Preachers; he was known primarily as a learned and eloquent rhetorician. But at the time that he was an inmate of the Bentivoglio palace at Milan it became clear to him that his true rôle was that of a *raconteur* rather than that of a preacher, that it was to be his part to amuse rather than to teach his generation; although, like some novelists of our own day, he seems to have thought, sometimes, that an artist might take upon himself the office of a moral or religious teacher without injury to his art.

Ippolita Bentivoglio was a remarkable woman in an age that produced many remarkable women. We can under-

Ippolita
discovers
his true
vocation

Ippolita
Bentivoglio

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

INTRO-
DUCTION

stand something of her charm as we look upon her grave, sweet face, painted by Luini on the eastern wall of the church of the Monastero Maggiore in her native city. Possessed herself of high intellectual qualities, she devoted some of her great wealth to the patronage of artists and men of letters. She became strongly attached to Bandello, and in her house he found a pleasant refuge and congenial society. There, too, he was brought into contact with persons like the Countess of Celant and the Duchess of Malfi's ill-fated husband, whose tragical histories he afterwards gave to the world. It was at the request of his patroness that he first began to write down the *novelle* that he had himself told, or had heard told, in her house.

Bandello at
Mantua

Isabella
d'Este

His fidelity to the Sforza faction ultimately made it expedient for Bandello to quit Milan. Driven from the city by political discords, he took refuge at Mantua, where he enjoyed the friendship of Isabella d'Este. There, surrounded again by a *lieta brigata* of artists and poets, of lords and ladies, he often discoursed of affairs of love, and won admiration by his skill as a narrator. So far did he succeed in gaining the esteem of the great Duchess, that, when certain 'envious malignants'¹ complained to the General of his order of the too great freedom of the Dominican's walk and conversation, Isabella at once took up his defence, and despatched to his superior an extraordinary document,² in which she testified to the religious and modest life of her friend, and extolled his innumerable virtues. How Bandello was revered and beloved in his own

¹ *Bandello*, *Novelle*, Parte terza, Novella 42. See ed. cit., vol. viii. p. 76.

² *Luzio*, *I Precettori d'Isabella d'Este*, Ancona, 1887, p. 45.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

day is shown in the eulogies of him written by Leandro Alberti¹ and J. C. Scaliger; by the high value that J. J. Scaliger set upon Bandello's appreciation of his father; as well as in the allusions that are made to him by other contemporary writers. It has been left to squeamish critics of later ages to pour abuse upon the name of this genial writer to whom literature owes so much.

In the year 1520 Bandello returned to his beloved Milan. He spent five uneventful years there; and then a great disaster befell him. In the sack of the city that followed upon the battle of Pavia, his father's house was burnt down, and the precious manuscripts of his *novelle* were lost. After some years of wandering, he became secretary to Cesare Fregoso, a *condottiere*, and a member of a noble Genoese family, whose wife, Costanza Rangona, was a connection of Bandello's old friends the Gonzagas. Fregoso, who at that time was in the service of the Venetian Republic, bore a somewhat ill name, as may be seen from the Venetian State papers;² but, cruel and unscrupulous as he was in his public life, he seems to have been beloved, and even respected, by many honourable men.³ Brought up at the Court of France, amidst all his treacheries and tergiversations he remained true at heart to his adopted country, and was always loved and trusted by its sovereign, Francis I. A born conspirator, he ran many serious risks in the cause of France, and it was in her service that he ultimately met with his death.

INTRO-
DUCTION

The sack of
Milan :
Bandello's
manuscripts
lost

Cesare
Fregoso

Costanza
Rangona

¹ *Leandro Alberti*, op. cit., fol. 137 and fol. 132.

² Calendar of State Papers, Venetian, 1534-1554, Nos. 413, 428, 431, 456.

³ *Uberti Folieta*, *Clarorum Ligurum Elogia*, Romæ, 1574, p. 126. *Paolo Giovio*, ed. 1572, vol. ii. p. 84; and several passages in Bandello's novels and J. C. Scaliger's poems.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

INTRO- DUCTION

Bandello at
Garda and
Verona

Bandello troubled himself but little with the political affairs which occupied his patron. He had 'found himself,' and he wished only to be allowed to live his own life. Through the generosity of Fregoso, he was now able to live 'a se e alle Muse.' He held converse with his friends on the shore of that beautiful lake of which Virgil and Catullus sang, and which was described in Bandello's own day by that master of Italian prose, Jacopo Bonfadio. At the same time, Platonist as he was, he took a singular delight in the more material pleasures which Fregoso provided so liberally for his friends. In the prefaces to some of his novels he speaks enthusiastically of the 'Lucullian banquets' that the *condottiere* was accustomed to give at Garda, in a castle of his which had once belonged to the Scaligers.

The war in
Piedmont

But at length Bandello's quiet was again disturbed. Fregoso, who had all along been in secret communication with the French Court, suddenly deserted his Venetian employers, and again publicly entered the service of France. He accepted a command in Piedmont, and, so Morosini tells us, took with him some of his Veronese friends, much to the wrath of the Republic. For nigh on two years Bandello lived in a manner which left him little leisure for his favourite pursuits. Throughout two campaigns—the story of which was told by his own friend Ferron,¹ and, with fuller detail, by Guillaume and Martin du Bellay²—he accompanied his patron, bewailing amongst the hills and valleys of Pied-

¹ *Arnoldi Ferroni, Burdigalensis, De rebus gestis Gallorum, Lutetiæ, 1555, lib. viii.*

² *Du Bellay, Les mémoires de Mess. Martin du Bellay et de Mess. Guillaume du Bellay, Paris, 1569. See books vii. and viii.*

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

mont the loss of his accustomed ease. At last a respite came from wandering. On the conclusion of the Truce of Nice, Bandello went with Fregoso to Castelgiuffredo, the seat of Luigi Gonzaga, where were Costanza Fregoso and her sister Ginevra, as well as a beautiful young girl, an orphan, named Lucrezia, whom Bandello had known as a 'bamboлина' in the house of her father.

INTRO-
DUCTION

Castel-
giuffredo

Lucrezia
Gonzaga

There again the novelist lived 'to himself and the Muses.' He resumed once more the composition of his tales, and wrote several sonnets and *canzoni*. He also acted as tutor to 'la divinissima Lucrezia,' reading with her the poetry of Greece and of Rome. His young pupil was beautiful, intelligent, and sympathetic; and Bandello, old as he was, became very much in love with her. She stood only second in his affections to his dead Violante, whom, he declared, she strongly resembled.

This pleasant sojourn at Castelgiuffredo came to an end all too soon. In July 1540¹ Costanza Fregoso went to Castiglione for change of air. Her husband, who was in ill-health, followed her there immediately; and whilst they were away, the lady of the castle, Costanza's sister Ginevra, died suddenly. A few days later Lucrezia Gonzaga and her sister returned to the family seat at Gazuolo, leaving Bandello 'pieno d'amarissima doglia.' Thus was this happy company sadly broken up.

But all these changes were but preludes to a greater mutation, a tragedy which altered the whole subsequent course of Bandello's life. In June 1541, Cesare Fregoso,

¹ *Ronchini*, Lettere d'uomini illustri conservate in Parma nel R. Archivio di Stato, Parma, 1853, vol. i. pp. 67-89.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

INTRO-
DUCTION

Fregoso's
assassination

Costanza flies
to France

The *château*
of Bazens

Bandello's
bird

The *curé* of
Cabalsaut

when on his way to Venice as an ambassador from the French Court, was assassinated near Pavia by certain soldiers from that place, at the instigation of the Marquis of Vasto, the Imperial Governor of Milan.¹ On hearing the terrible news, the widowed Costanza herself went to Venice. But she was soon compelled to fly that city; as the authorities of the Republic discovered that her husband had again played them false, and had been one of the prime movers in a plot by means of which the most intimate secrets of the Ten were revealed to French statesmen. Thereupon Costanza made her way to France, accompanied by her faithful secretary Bandello, and threw herself on the compassion of the King. In recognition of Fregoso's services, Francis made her the best reparation in his power. Through his liberality she was enabled to live in almost royal state at the castle of Bazens near Agen, in the midst of a district which, so Reclus tells us, is the most fertile in all France. In that pleasant retreat above the valley of the Masse she was visited by Margaret of Navarre and other great personages connected with the Court. Her house was always open to poets, artists, and scholars, and she entertained lavishly the aristocracy of the province. There the happy novelist spent much of his time in his library, cheered, as were Catullus and Verlaine, by the constant companionship of another 'blithe poet,' a sweet-songed bird² whom he dearly loved. He directed, too, the education of the sons of his patroness, and for a time held the cure of Cabalsaut, a village near to Bazens.

¹ *Du Bellay*, ed. cit., book ix. pp. 274, 275.

² *Julii Caesaris Scaligeri*, *Poemata omnia*, ed. 1621; Farrago, p. 162.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

It was not the first time that Agen had played an important part in the history of those connected movements of which that called the Renaissance was merely the culminating one. For from Agen had gone forth that monk Raymond,¹ afterwards Archbishop of Toledo, who was, in the twelfth century, one of the chief promoters of the study of the scientific works of Aristotle, and to whom Joannes Avendeth dedicated his translation of the 'Logic' of Avicenna. To Agen, four centuries later, came J. C. Scaliger, who first sought to re-establish the authority of Aristotle in the world of letters. He had already been living there for some years when Costanza Fregoso first took up her residence at the old episcopal palace near that city. Having met Bandello at Mantua, he became a regular visitor to Bazens; and, notwithstanding his inordinate vanity, this genial, learned *farceur* seems soon to have won the affection of the lady of the *château*. Indeed, Scaliger, although a sexagenarian, professed himself to have fallen a victim to Costanza's beauty, and he sang the charms of his mature mistress in many a stilted verse. To her he dedicated his 'Thaumantia,' his 'Lacrymæ,' his 'Nova Epigrammata,' and other of his works. Although Scaliger held in contempt all 'porci clerici,' he became strongly attached to Bandello. He not only wrote poetical panegyrics of the novelist: he also composed verses in honour of the ladies whom his Platonist friend had honoured with his love. In fact, during their years of companionship at Agen, the two

INTRO-
DUCTION

Agen

Raymond,
Archbishop
of Toledo

J. C. Scaliger

¹ *Francisco de Pisa*, Historia de Toledo, Toledo, 1617, Primera Parte, lib. iv. cap. 3, p. 166. *Charles Jourdain*, Recherches sur les Traductions d'Aristote, Paris, 1843, p. 108.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

INTRO- old men seem to have passed a considerable portion of their
DUCTION time in scribbling love-poems, the one in Latin, the other
Two aged amorists in Italian; for at that time Bandello was busy preparing
for the press his 'Canti' in praise of the divine Lucrezia,
which were published at Agen in 1545.

Bandello Five years later Bandello was raised to the episcopate.
Bishop of He accepted the see of Agen with the intention of holding
Agen it only until his pupil Ettore Fregoso was ready to take it,
and most of his duties were performed by Jean Valier,
bishop of Grasse. There is evidence, however, in the local
archives¹ to show that Bandello really exercised his office,
although for the most part he continued to live to himself
and the Muses. Some time before he was made a bishop,

The recovery Bandello had been gladdened by the almost miraculous
of the lost recovery of the manuscripts which had been lost in the sack
manuscripts of Milan. Thus encouraged, he resumed the preparation of
his novels for the press, and in 1554 the first three volumes
of his collection were published by Busdrago of Lucca. The
fourth and last volume did not see the light until twenty
years later, long after the death of its author.

Of the closing years of Bandello's life but little is known.
The death of He died about 1562, having resigned his see some years
Bandello before in favour of Giano, the eldest son of his patron;
and he was buried in the church of the Jacobins at Agen,
at the foot of the high altar. The last words that he
'Vivete lieti!' addressed to the public were, 'Live merry!' 'Vivete lieti!'
In those words he summed up a great part of his philosophy.

¹ It is as curious that none of Bandello's many biographers have taken the trouble to consult the archives of the *département* of Lot-et-Garonne, as that, with one single exception, they have all been content to copy down, without further inquiry, the marvellous blunders of Mazzuchelli.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

It was a fitting farewell speech from the lips of one who had done so much to amuse his age.

INTRO-
DUCTION

III

Much that is irrelevant and futile has been written in regard to the licentiousness of Bandello's tales and the profligacy of the generation for whom they were composed. It is well-nigh impossible for us to arrive at anything like a just and adequate judgment upon the moral state and acts of the men of a race and an age unlike our own. If it be ever desirable to attempt to do so, such a task should only be entered upon by one who has undergone a special training, and who has a certain rare habit of mind. Unfortunately the vast majority of modern pronouncements on subjects of this kind have been as worthless as they have been impertinent; for they have been the utterances of men who, whilst possessing in some cases high literary gifts, have lacked the most necessary qualification for their self-conferred office. These so-confident judges have failed to realise that 'nothing man has projected from himself is 'really intelligible except at its own date, and from its 'proper point of view in the never-resting "secular process."' They have shown themselves to be lacking in that 'historic 'sense, which, by an imaginative act, throws itself back 'into a world unlike one's own,' and estimates everything belonging to it 'in its connection with the age from which it proceeded.'

Although Bandello's own defence of his stories is quite clear, and up to a certain point reasonable enough, his contentions have been seriously misunderstood and misrepresented

Bandello's
defence

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

INTRO- sented. He had endeavoured, so he tells us, to write true
DUCTION histories of events which had actually occurred, many of
them within his own time. He had sought to make a per-
manent addition to the materials of that science of human
action of which every wise man is a student. He had
described, he admits, 'unhonest and vicious deeds'; but,
like Milton, he believed that 'the knowledge and survey
'of vice is, in this world, necessary to the constituting of
'human virtue.' Nay, more: although he had not, in most
cases, composed his stories with any directly didactic purpose,
but merely to amuse, yet in relating them he had, he con-
tended, taken care to condemn vice and to uphold goodness to
admiration; he had always clearly pointed out the punish-
ments that ultimately overtake the wicked, as well as the
happiness and glory that are the sure reward of right conduct.

The art of
Bandello

Whether Bandello succeeded in exercising a salutary
moral influence upon the readers of his stories is, of course,
an open question; but there can be no doubt of his success
in realising his literary aims. He gave to the world vivid
pictures of social life, as it was at the very centre of in-
tellectual and artistic progress in one of the most important
epochs of human history.

Bandello and
Defoe

In some not unimportant points he strongly resembles
our first great English novelist. Like Defoe, after having
been trained to fulfil the office of a preacher, he devoted
some of his best energies to the composition of profane
stories. Like Defoe, too, he occasionally showed, in his
novels, a regrettable tendency to revert to his original
vocation. Like Defoe, 'he was never gravelled for lack
of matter, and had no nice ideas about manner.' Both

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

novelists had 'a natural infirmity of homely, plain writing.' Both, too, in spite of many faults of style, had, in an extraordinary measure, the power of imparting verisimilitude to a story. Such popularity as Bandello won for himself in his own country was almost entirely due to the possession of this quality. Living amongst a people who have always been so keenly alive to the importance of manner, he ever showed too little regard for it. His sentences were often awkward. His vocabulary was unchastened. His whole mode of expression lacked grace and distinction. And yet he never fails to make the events he is describing appear real to the reader. His style had, as D'Ancona says, 'la grande efficacia rappresentativa.'

INTRO- DUCTION

Bandello's
skill as a
narrator

His success was largely due to his adherence to a line of conduct which many distinguished critics in his own day thought to be unjustifiable. He persisted in telling his stories in his own rough northern speech.¹ 'I am not a 'Tuscan,' he says, 'but a Lombard, a descendant of the 'Ostrogoths. Were the Tuscan language natural to me, 'I would gladly use it, for I know it to be chaste and 'beautiful, but I cannot now attempt to use a language 'not my own.' With his friend Castiglione² he believed that a man who has anything to say will express it best in his own native tongue; and that out of it he will gather his own vocabulary, adding here and there strong and graceful words of foreign origin. Like him, too, he held that a language, if it is living, is perpetually changing,

Bandello and
the purists

¹ *Bandello*, *Novelle*, Parte prima, Dedicata ad Ippolita Sforza Bentivoglio; ed. cit., vol. i. pp. 4, 5. Also Parte terza, *Il Bandello ai lettori*; ed. cit., vol. vii. p. 9.

² *Castiglione*, *Il Cortegiano*, Lettera dedicatoria, ii.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

INTRO- and that it is folly in a writer to heed too much the
DUCTION censures of purists and pedants. So to the last he con-
tinued to express himself in the Lombard idiom, and did
not scruple to use the racy colloquialisms of the ordinary
conversational speech of the day whenever it suited his
purpose.

IV

François de
Belleforest

A protégé of
Queen
Margaret

Belleforest
and Mon-
taigne

Amongst the literary *coterie* that Costanza Fregoso gathered round her at the castle of Bazens was to be found, no doubt, a young poet of the province, named François de Belleforest, a *protégé* of her friend the Queen of Navarre. He was the son of a soldier of fortune, a man of noble family, who had died young, leaving his wife in straitened circumstances. She sought to give her boy a good education, and was much helped in her efforts by Queen Margaret. At the age of seven or eight years François left home, and was nurtured in the royal palace. 'The tenth Muse' inspired him with that love of *nouvelle* which clung to him throughout his life. To her influence, too, may be traced the intolerable prolixity of his style and his tiresome habit of moralising. His patroness destined the boy for the law; and he was sent, whilst still very young, to the famous college at Bordeaux, where he had for his teachers Muret and George Buchanan, and for one of his fellow-students a certain indolent youth who bore the name of Michel Eyquem de Montaigne. Like the young Montaigne, he subsequently became a student at the great legal school of Toulouse. Whilst there he grew weary of the dryness of his legal studies, and, renouncing the idea of becoming a lawyer, he determined to devote

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

himself to the profession of poetry. He was not without certain valuable literary qualities, and, had he taken pains to improve himself in his art, he might have attained to a respectable position as a maker of verses. But he was a vain, self-satisfied youth, gifted with a fatal fluency of expression, who spent his time in ladies' boudoirs, and was ready to believe all that his feminine admirers were pleased to say about his otiose productions. And so it happened that such natural gifts as he had remained undeveloped. He was, in fact, one of those unhappy beings who are without any power of self-criticism, and to whom the severer discipline of the world's great school comes too late to be of any service.

After quitting Toulouse, he wandered about from *château* to *château* in his native province, living, as his friend Du Verdier tells us,¹ 'parmi les délices de la noblesse, à courtiser et faire des vers Françaises pour plaire aux dames et demoiselles.' It was during this period of his life that he resided at Agen, and acted as tutor in the household of a certain M. de Nort, a staunch Catholic himself, but at the head of a family which gave more than one champion to the Protestant cause. In the *Histoires Tragiques* he has left us a description of the city as it appeared to him at that time.² 'It was,' he says, 'a veritable *coupe-gorge*, full of thievish financiers, voluptuous priests, and lewd young students of the law, who robbed women of their honour

INTRO-
DUCTION

Belleforest
deserts the
law for
poetry

Belleforest
at Agen

¹ *Antoine du Verdier*, Bibliothèque des Auteurs François; ed. de Rigoley de Juigny, Paris, 1772-73; tom. iii. p. 608.

² *Belleforest*, *Histoires Tragiques*, Rouen edition, 1604; tom. vi. pp. 204-6.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

INTRO- ' and the poor of the fruits of their labour, passing their
DUCTION ' time in chambering and wantonness.'

Belleforest goes to Paris Tired at last of his wandering life, which brought him but little wealth, Belleforest determined if possible to win fame and fortune in the capital. When he reached Paris the constellation of the Pleiad was in the ascendant. The young Commingeois became a part of that nebula of minor stars that clustered round the seven greater lights of that galaxy of poets. He was admitted to the friendship of Baïf and Dorat, as well as of Ronsard himself. Unfortunately, genius, if it be a disease, is not a zymotic one, and Belleforest could not succeed in imparting to his verses that subtle charm that characterised the work of his friends. He was, in fact, one of the poetasters of Ronsard's school described by Mr. Pater, in whom 'the grace of the master 'lapsed into affectation, his learning into pedantry, his 'exotic fineness into a trick.'

The Pleiad

Like Ronsard, he was a zealous champion of Mary Queen of Scots; and when, owing to a change of paymasters, George Buchanan from being her sycophant became her slanderer,¹ Belleforest defended the queen against 'les calomnies faulces et impositions iniques' of his old tutor and hers.

The
Histoires
Tragiques

Belleforest's early prose writings met with a better reception than his verse had done. The *Histoires Tragiques* passed, as has been said, through several editions, and was eagerly read throughout France. In the preparation of the

¹ *Belleforest*, 'L'innocence de la très illustre, très chaste, et débonnaire Princesse, Madame Marie, Roïne d'Ecosse,' Lyons, 1572; a reply to George Buchanan's 'Detection,' published under the initials F. B.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

first volume, Belleforest had as collaborator the historian Pierre Boistuau de Launay ; but out of the one hundred and twenty-five novels of the complete collection, all but six were translated or written by Belleforest himself. His history of the nine kings of France who had borne the name of Charles—the least inaccurate, and the most readable, too, of all his works—gained for him the post of historiographer of France.

INTRO-
DUCTION

Historio-
grapher of
France

But though, for a time, fortune flattered him with delusive hopes, the success that he sought never came to him. His entire lack of the qualifications required to fill properly the office he held became patent to every one, and he was soon deposed from it. The later volumes, too, of the *Histoires Tragiques* did not have quite the same success as the earlier ones. Belleforest gradually sank lower and lower, until at last the petted darling of the ladies of Guienne, the friend of princes and nobles, became a mere publisher's hack, slaving away with pathetic perseverance to get bread for his household. Of such literary qualities as he had once possessed, the only one that survived was his extraordinary fecundity. He had, said one of his contemporaries, 'les moules à faire les livres.' He tried his hand at all kinds of literary work ; and, in the course of a few years, he produced no less than eighty volumes, all equally devoid of distinction. He engaged in tuition to eke out his scanty literary earnings, and also made persistent efforts to secure the help and patronage of the wealthy and the great. With this end in view, he wrote fulsome eulogies of several persons holding high positions in the state. But the king and his courtiers turned a deaf ear to the appeals of the poor

Belleforest's
fall

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

INTRO-
DUCTION

Commingeois poet. Charles may, as Mr. Pater believed, have been sincere in his reverence for literature; but, except in the case of Ronsard, he was never liberal in his treatment of literary men.¹ 'Les poètes,' he said, 'resembloient, en certaines choses, aux genets et autres généreux chevaux qu'il faut nourrir sans engrosser, à fin qu'ils ne deviennent porcs.' Belleforest's position became more and more hopeless as he advanced in years. At length he was so hard driven by poverty, that he stole the fruits of another man's labour to sell it for bread: he was guilty of the most flagrant plagiarism. By nature an honourable gentleman, this offence weighed upon his conscience, and on his death-bed he sent for André Thevet, the man whom he had injured, and, in the presence of witnesses, he earnestly begged his forgiveness.

The
Histoires
Tragiques

Belleforest's
style

To the end of his life he remained loyal to his affection for *novelle*. Excepting his verse, it was the only literary work that he did *con amore*. His seven volumes of *Histoires Tragiques* contained some novels entirely by his own hand; and in those that were professedly translations he by no means literally adhered to the original. These tales of his were no mere hack-work. He had his own views as to how a story ought to be told, and he sought with much effort to realise his artistic ideal. Unfortunately that ideal was an utterly false one, and he shamefully marred some of Bandello's best tales. Belleforest had a very poor opinion of the bishop's style, which was much too direct, simple, and unadorned for the courtier-poet. He

¹ *Belleforest*, *Les Chroniques et Annales de France*; ed. Paris, 1600, p. 648.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

therefore set to work to 'embellish' the *novelle* by inserting classical allusions, and similes taken from natural history; by introducing here and there an inane poem or a turgid speech; by besprinkling all the text with precious phrases. Moreover, being, like his first patroness, a most intolerable prig, he was fond of interrupting the narrative to deliver himself of trite little aphorisms and moral commonplaces. Thus, a brisk, amusing story he sometimes transformed into a tediously dull one by his impertinent embellishments. Nevertheless, so strong, and so universal, was the passion for *novelle*, that his *Histoires Tragiques* became widely popular, notwithstanding his faults as a narrator.

INTRO-
DUCTION

V

The early volumes of Belleforest's translations happened to fall into the hands of a young Englishman, Geoffrey Fenton, a kinsman, it is said, of the Dudleys and the Cecils, who for a time was resident in Paris. It is probable that he had come to France in the train of that lover of Italian culture, Sir Thomas Hoby, whose career as an ambassador was cut short by death in the autumn of 1566. Fenton came of an old Nottinghamshire family, of no great wealth though with powerful connections; and, like many young men of his class, he left his ancestral home to follow the career of a soldier of fortune. Of his early history but little is known. It has been asserted, and with some show of reason, that, in his youth, he visited the Court of Spain and some of the great Italian cities. At any rate, in the year 1567 we find him living in Paris, an eager student of the literatures of France and Italy. And it was whilst he was

Geoffrey
Fenton

Fenton in
Paris

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

INTRO- residing there that he spent some of his 'voyed hours' in
DUCTION 'forcyng certeyne Tragical Discourses oute of theyr French
The *Tragicall* 'tearmes into our Englishe phrasce.'
Discourses

There were strong practical reasons which led Fenton, at the age of twenty-eight, to devote himself to literature. Having wandered in his youth 'in the laborinth of sensualitie,' he had by that time 'founde the falte' of his own life. He had broken, at last, 'the slepe of his longe follye,' and had 'retired to amendment of lyfe.' Ambitious and hopeful in spite of present misfortune, he determined to obtain for himself a position in the world, and took for his own the confident motto, 'Mon heur viendra.' He was shrewd enough to see that any well-bred and comely young man, possessed of ability and judgment, might hope to win the smiles of the queen; and that literary success was one of the surest avenues to her favour. To literature, therefore, he determined to devote himself; and, with excellent judgment, he dedicated this his first book to one of Elizabeth's most intimate friends, a lady who had lost her beauty through her devotion to her sovereign, the mother of that Astrophel who was 'the President of all nobleness and chevalree.' Twelve years later, when the goal which he had striven to reach was then looming near, when he was, as it were, almost on the threshold of the royal chamber, and was about to be admitted to his sovereign's closest confidence, he dedicated his crowning work, his translation of Guicciardini's *Storia d'Italia*, to Elizabeth herself. In the preface to the *Tragical Discourses*, as well as in several of the interpolations in the text of them, he tells us of the many troubles that pressed upon him in his early manhood. He bewails 'the mobilitie

The Lady
Mary Sidney

The Queen

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

of fortune' and his own penuriousness. He complains of the fickleness of some 'light, inconstant dame' who, 'for the respect of present pleasure, was unmindful of her absent frende.' Yet more bitterly does he upbraid his own kinsmen for their heartless neglect of him. 'Frendes 'nowe a dayes,' he exclaims, 'resemble the raven or hungry kyte, who never flyeth but towards the place where they hope to fynde some thinge to praye upon. So the frendes of our age be fled so far from the virtue of true frendshipp, that they will not onely refuse to restore hym whome God and nature hath bounde them to susteine, but also make no conscience to disclaim the name of a kinsman to the nearest allye they have, and that without any cause, onlesse you will impute it to the want of equall welthe.' His own experience, he tells us, moves him 'to make a chalenge' to some in England; and he wishes that 'his power were as indifferent to pleade' with the chief offender as he has 'juste reason to put hym in remembrance of his fault.'

INTRO-
DUCTION

Fenton
neglected by
his kinsmen

For Fenton the years that followed the publication of the *Tragicall Discourses* were full of literary effort. Besides translating some theological treatises, in which he displayed the vigour of his Protestantism, he published, in 1572, a monstrously dull book, a translation from the French, entitled '*Monophylo*, a philosophical discourse and division of love,' as well as another volume, which consisted of a collection of passages taken chiefly from Guevara's works, and to which he gave the title of *Golden Epistles*. His last literary performance was that translation of Guicciardini's History of which mention has already been made.

Fenton's
other works

Fenton was now no longer without powerful patrons.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

INTRO-
DUCTION

His kinsmen had ceased to treat him with coldness; and, although his twelve years of work as an author and translator had brought him but little wealth, he had won for himself many friends who were willing to use their influence on his behalf. Sir Henry Sidney and his wife, the learned Lady Hoby, Walsingham and Pelham, his brother Edward and the great Burghley—all in some way or other lent him their aid. But more than that, he had succeeded in gaining the confidence of the queen herself. And now, having used literature as a means to win royal favour and to obtain for himself a position in the world, when he had attained his object, like a successful *parvenu* he kicked down the ladder by which he had risen. He turned his back upon authorship, and devoted his undivided energies to the more profitable trade in which his friends and kinsmen had found him employment.

Fenton
deserts
literature
for politics

Fenton
appointed
Secretary in
Ireland

Spenser

It was in the summer of 1580 that Fenton,¹ through the intervention on his behalf of Burghley and Walsingham, obtained the post of Secretary to the new Lord Deputy of Ireland, Lord Grey de Wilton. In the train of Lord Grey there was another, and more distinguished, servant of the Muses, Edmund Spenser, who, in his great work, has left us allegorical representations of some of the Englishmen who held office in Ireland in his own day. How near to the truth are these ideal portraits of Ireland's rulers he can best estimate who knows the stories of their glorious deeds as told by some of the heroes who shared in them. Only

¹ The details of Fenton's political life are to be found in the Calendar of State Papers, Ireland, the Carew Papers, and the Lismore Papers, second series, ed. by Rev. A. B. Grosart.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

one who has patiently read through the Irish State Papers can realise fully how unlike to the gentle knights of Spenser's allegory were these cruel, squalid place-hunters who batted on the wretched Irish; how far removed were these mercenary sycophants from the Arthegalls and Sir Guyons of the *Faërie Queene*. Their own letters and despatches reveal to the full their cruelty, their falsity, their meanness. In them we see the fiendish delight taken by such brave gentlemen as Captain Thomas Woodhouse and Sir Richard Bingham in the butchery of half-armed, starving men and helpless women and children.¹ We see honourable personages continually employed in secretly traducing rival sycophants, and in sending private accusations against their colleagues to the queen's ministers in England. Friend betrays friend; comrade spies on comrade: almost any one of the rascal crew is ready to sell his soul for a piece of gold. Their lust for loot is insatiable. Each one of them is continually begging for wardships, confiscations, and sequestered parsonages. And how wildly they rage when one of the pack, stronger or more cunning than the rest, carries off some quarry before their eyes!

The best that can be said for Fenton is, that he did not sink quite so low as some of his rivals. To him, as to the rest, notwithstanding all his high-sounding phrases, the pursuit of politics was primarily a *métier*. But, hireling as he was, he was neither lacking in gratitude, nor in a certain kind of

INTRO-
DUCTION
Ireland's
rulers in the
sixteenth
century

¹ Calendar of State Papers, Ireland, 1586-8, Sept. 29, 1586, Woodhouse to Fenton; also in same vol., Byngham's discourse to Burghley, Oct. 6, 1586; and a letter of Sir William Herbert's, Oct. 20, 1588. See also the Burkes' 'complaints,' in the next volume, Nov. 20, 1589.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

INTRO-
DUCTION
Elizabeth

Fenton wins
the queen's
confidence

An informer

loyalty to his employer. He was intelligent enough, too, to see that whilst an impostor might, for a time, obtain the favour of the queen by pandering to her vanity or her amorousness, such triumphs were but short-lived. Her keen intuitiveness, her thorough knowledge of human nature, and, above all, her masculine common-sense, prevented her from being long the dupe of a deceiver. He therefore set to work to establish himself in her confidence; and he was so far successful, that in the end the queen came to trust to him as the most reliable source of information in regard to Irish affairs. 'Whoever was Lord Deputy in Ireland,' says one of his biographers, 'he continued to be Elizabeth's counsellor there; as a man upon whom she depended, from whom she took her notions of the state of affairs, whose credit was not to be shaken by the artifices of any faction whatever.' His position was indeed a powerful one; but it is difficult to see how any honourable gentleman could have played the part that he did for nigh upon three decades. Throughout this time it was his practice to keep a close watch upon the actions of his colleagues and professed friends, and to send secret information of their conduct to his sovereign and her chief ministers. He was about their path continually, and spied out all their ways. Their hasty words, their slightest omissions of duty, their petty peculations, were all noted down by her Majesty's 'faithful servitor,' and were reported to her or her chief ministers. 'He was,' said his contemporaries, 'a moth in the garment,' 'a flea in the bed,' of all the lord deputies of that time. By no means a precisian in his own practice, he was, like many of his school, extremely censorious of the

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

conduct of others, and did not use with moderation and charity the extraordinary powers which he possessed. Consequently, although he was discreet and secret in his manner of communicating information to the Court, men soon began to suspect him, and he came, ultimately, to be more deeply and universally hated than any other officer of the queen in Ireland.

INTRO-
DUCTION

Hatred of
Fenton

But although his enemies were ceaselessly at work, they were unable to deprive him of his unique position, and twice only did they succeed in winning even a temporary advantage over him. Fenton's first reverse occurred in 1587. In January of that year, Sir John Perrot, knowing that 'malicious tongues' were continually speaking evil of him to those in authority, in his eagerness for revenge was guilty of an act of injustice which caused Fenton some humiliation and suffering. The Lord Deputy caused his enemy to be arrested, carried through the streets of Dublin on a market-day, and thrust into the common gaol. The queen took up the case of her servant, ordered her hot-headed brother to release Fenton immediately, and bade him forbear that hard kind of proceeding in like case thereafter. From that time until the end of the reign, Fenton's power remained unimpaired. The queen herself wrote to him some years later, saying that it was in him that she reposed her trust 'to receive her privatest dispatches.'

Fenton's first
period of
humiliation

But after her death his enemies had an opportunity which they did not fail to take advantage of. Full of insular prejudices, hating and despising both French and Spaniards, Italians and Irish, Fenton, in his official communications, had been especially bitter in his abuse of the Scots. 'They

Fenton's
second period
of humilia-
tion

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

INTRO- 'are,' he declared, 'a needy and beggarly race, and full of
DUCTION 'treachery.' He was averse to introducing them into Ulster to supplant the rebel Irish. 'Dogs,' said he, 'will not eat dogs' flesh.' Towards the close of the queen's reign, he wrote more than once to Cecil denouncing James himself as a treacherous ally, alleging that he secretly endeavoured to keep Ireland in sedition, that he was in league both with the rebels and with Spain, and that all 'his fair semblances to her Majesty' were but 'Scottish dissimulation.' It was therefore only natural that when James came to the throne the Secretary was fearful that he might lose his position. Of his colleagues in Ireland, as many as could get away hurried across the Channel, laden with all the money they could scrape together, and full of slanderous tales of each other, to bribe and lie their way into royal favour. Those who, perforce, had to remain behind paid some friend or patron to look after their interests at Court. From the highest to the lowest, as Fenton himself admitted, they 'were 'diligent to send out to seek the star risen in the North, and 'to carry myrrh and frankincense to it; every one seeking a 'St. Peter to lead him to Christ.' Fenton professed to Cecil that he 'reposed only on him to give him way to his Majesty's good opinion and favour'; but at the same time he sent over his servant to buy the support of other powerful courtiers. His emissary managed the matter badly. According to Fenton, he sought aid from the wrong persons, and 'followed the vanity of his own mind,' instead of adhering closely to his instructions. In short, his mission was entirely unsuccessful.

Cecil, moreover, seems to have taken umbrage at the

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

INTRO-
DUCTION

Irish Secretary's double-dealing. At any rate, he thought that it would be unwise to show too great favour to one who had said so many bitter things about the Scots king ; and consequently he did not exert himself on his friend's behalf when Fenton's enemies, seeing their opportunity, endeavoured to get him deposed from his office.

In writing at this time to his son-in-law Robert Boyle, Fenton says that 'had he had more of worldlye meanes he might have . . . kept his position intact.' But as he had not sufficient of 'this wicked transitory trash' to bribe effectively, his traducers gained a partial victory over him. He was compelled to share his office of Secretary with Sir Richard Coke.

For some time the old man continued to address piteous appeals to Cecil to help him to regain his former position. He reminded him of his long years of faithful service. In order to disprove the charges of peculation and bribetaking that were persistently directed against him, he sent the Minister 'a true collection of all his worldly estates in England and Ireland.' He said that he had 'always honoured and followed Cecil with an upright heart,' and besought him not to allow him 'to be so unworthily overthrown, through the malice of his enemies, in his aged years.' He told him that he was ready again to play his old part, and to keep Cecil and the king privately informed as to the true state of affairs in Ireland.

For a long time his petitions were unanswered ; but in the end he received the reward of his importunity. In 1604 his office was regranted to him for life ; and a few years later we find Salisbury writing to his 'verie loving friend'

Fenton re-
stored to his
post

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

INTRO- in the old intimate strain, and telling him that whatever
DUCTION 'information he should at any time imparte, touching his
' Majesty's service, should be used in the way he desired.'

To the last, Fenton adhered to the principles he gave expression to in the *Tragicall Discourses*. To the last he advocated repressive measures against the 'dyabolicall secte of Rome.' In his despatches from Ireland he laments the want of a rack in England, and advocates the torturing of Irish prisoners. Like all fanatics, he believed at heart that the end justifies the means, and we find him urging Cecil to employ 'underhand means' for removing troublesome chief-

Fenton's brief
period of
moderation

tains, such as Florence MacCarthy Mor. Nevertheless, there was a time when even Fenton was dimly conscious of the folly and wickedness of the English rule. We find him telling Cecil, in 1596, that the sores of Ireland are too far gone to be cured with sharp medicines. We find him condemning 'the unworthy looseness of the soldiery,' and touched by 'the pitiful cry of the starving people.' He recognises that without 'framing the Irish first to love her Majesty' and her government, it was 'vain to expect that they would preserve in duty and affection.' 'Force,' he declares, 'is no remedy. It hath done no good these three years.' He recommends some milder way of pacification. For the time he stands out in shining contrast to blood-thirsty ministers of the gospel, such as Loftus, Daniel, and Lyon, who were continually imploring the government to draw the sword on this rebellious and stiff-necked people who would not, in spite of fines and imprisonments, come to Protestant conventicles to hear the Word of God preached. But the improvement was only momentary.

Force no
remedy

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

After the failure of the negotiations with Tyrone in 1597 and 1598, Fenton hardened his heart again. He was disgusted at the 'arrogance' of the Irish leader in daring to ask that the people might have 'liberty of conscience.' He despaired of winning over such obstinate heretics and rebels by merciful measures. 'Her Majesty must depend no more upon treaties and parleys, but turn her mercy to revenge.'

INTRO-
DUCTION

Fenton
hardens his
heart again

To attempt to utterly extirpate the plague of treason by main force would be too great and costly an undertaking. Some newer and sharper means of striking a blow at sedition must be adopted. Fenton is convinced that the serpent must be killed in the head, then 'the poison will have no further force in the limbs.' In short, he recommends that Tyrone shall be assassinated and his sons kidnapped.

The plot to
assassinate
Tyrone

He persuaded Cecil to agree to his proposals; and straightway he cast about 'to find an axe to strike down, 'at one blow, the great oak that had grown up in many 'years.' That is to say, he sought to discover a fit occasion and suitable agents for carrying out the dastardly plot he had concocted. Tyrone's extreme popularity was a serious obstacle to its development, and the death of Cecil's father caused it to be set on one side for a time; but, in spite of many discouragements, the Secretary did not cease to urge it upon his master, until the course of events finally extinguished all hopes of its success.

Fenton never again reverted to that more moderate and reasonable attitude, which once, for a brief space, he had assumed. In the closing years of his life we find him strenuously opposing Sir Arthur Chichester's earlier and more humane scheme for the settlement of Ulster. He was

Fenton and
the settle-
ment of
Ulster

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

INTRO-
DUCTION

disgusted with the toleration and lenity of the new Lord Deputy ; and he strongly objected to the granting of pardons to offenders, for by this means 'the king's well-deserving servitors were robbed of their recompense.' It was largely through his influence that Chichester's first proposals were set on one side, and that Ulster was treated as a conquered country, to be divided amongst the new settlers and the native Irish as seemed fit to her Majesty's representatives.

Sermons

Nevertheless, although an advocate of severe measures, Fenton did not believe in altogether neglecting to attempt to influence the people by moral suasion. He always clung to his belief in the efficacy of sermons ; and though he did not, as in his younger days, usurp himself the office of the preacher, he frequently counselled Cecil to send 'learned and discreet ministers' to Ireland, in the conviction that a strong regimen of Protestant harangues, tempered by a judicious use of the sword, the thumbscrew, and the rack, would prove an efficacious treatment for the maladies of that unhappy country.

Fenton's last
days

To the end of his days, too, he showed himself to be the same strenuous, narrow-minded servant of the crown. The pathetic letters¹ that he addressed in his old age to Richard Boyle reveal to us his diligence, his earnestness, as well as the strength of his domestic affections. Only a year before his death we find him telling his son-in-law that 'he cannot write to him at length,' as he is now 'so full to provide for the daungers that the tyme doth threaten,' and asking Boyle to commend him to 'good Kate,' and to his little grandson, his 'jewell Hodge.' And so, whilst still 'overprest

1609

¹ Lismore Papers, second series, ed. by Rev. A. B. Grosart.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

with business,' death overtook him, at Dublin, on October 19, 1609.

INTRO-
DUCTION

He played out to the end his rôle of Irish informer-in-chief; and his colleagues' thirst for vengeance did not cease even with his death. Before his body was cold they were seeking to obtain permission to search his papers.

The story of his life is not without its moral. It shows us to what depths of infamy a man may sink, who, lured on by a love of gain, deserts the calm pursuit of letters for the sordid game of politics.

V

'A soldier and a long robe,' a courtier and a statesman, Fenton's dual a theologian and a man of letters, Fenton displayed to the full that vigorous versatility which was so marked a characteristic of the men of our English Renaissance. His frequent interpolations in the text of the *Tragicall Discourses* throw considerable light on his personality, and reveal to us that in Fenton, as in other of his contemporaries, there was that extreme duality of temperament—of which Robert Greene afforded perhaps the most curious example—which made it possible for him to be strongly attracted at the same moment by two movements which had very little in common, and which, in their later aspects, were mutually opposed to each other.

temperament

The Renais-
sance and the
Puritan
movement

These significant additions in Fenton's first book reveal to us on the one hand a young man imbued with the spirit of the Renaissance, its restless curiosity, its admiration for 'virtue,' its conviction of the power and importance of the individual: they show him to be an enthusiastic student of

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

INTRO-
DUCTION

the philosophy and literature of the old pagan world, as well as eager to learn all that he could about nature and about the men of his own day. On the other hand, we find him strongly influenced by nascent Puritanism, and already full of narrow prejudices. In the end it was the Puritan in him that triumphed. But although, when still in early middle life, he forsook humane pursuits, although as a politician he won for himself that pecuniary reward which the service of literature did not bring him, it is as a literary man that he is most widely and most honourably known. His first book, his *Tragicall Discourses*, has secured for him a niche in the temple of fame. The great historian of English poetry declared that of all those collections of Italian love-stories which exercised so profound an influence on the England of Elizabeth, this miscellany of his was the best in point of size and selection; and that opinion has been indorsed by many discerning critics since Warton's day.

The
*Tragicall
Discourses*
his most
notable work

Fenton's aim

Fenton's professed object in writing these *Tragicall Discourses* was twofold. He wished to give recreation to, as well as provide instruction for, 'the fraile ympes of his own age.'

The value of
histories

He was firmly convinced, too, of the value of histories as a means of imparting moral and religious instruction to the young. 'The most parte of the simple and ignorant sorte,' he urges, 'are rather moved with such examples, then reduced with the severe sentences of somme great philosopher or reformed theologyan.' He admits that, 'at the first syghte,' these *Discourses* of his 'may importe certeyne vanytyes or fonde practises in love.' Nevertheless, he does not doubt but that 'he will be absolved of any vain intent' by the fair-minded, 'seinge that he has rather noted diver-

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

‘sitie of examples, in sondrye younge men and women, INTRO-
‘approvyng sufficiently the inconvenience happenynge by DUCTION
‘the pursute of lycenceous desyer, than affected in any
‘sorte such uncerteyne follies.’ He does not approve of ‘a Milton’s
‘fugitive and cloistered virtue, unexercised and unbreathed, *Areopagitica*
‘that never sallies out and sees her adversary.’ Like Ban-
dello, he believes, with the great Puritan poet, that men
should know ‘the utmost that vice promises to her fol-
‘lowers’; and that ‘the knowledge and survey of vice is,
‘in this world, necessary to the constituting of human
‘virtue.’ He does not, therefore, at all agree with those
who would have the young ‘read only of the noble actes of
good men.’ They must also have set before them ‘the evill
doings of the wicked,’ and learn to trace accurately the
consequences that flow from them. If such knowledge were
not of value, he urges, it is inconceivable that, ‘for so many
‘hundreth years, in all common states, as well heathen as
‘christened, would have been permitted the reading of sondrye
‘Poetes, whose commodies and tragedies importe a description
‘figuratyve of the wicked lives of all degrees of men and
‘women; wythout intente to perswade any ymitation that
‘waye, but rather to provoke the multitude, by familiar
‘traines, to avoyde such condicions as they sawe justly re-
‘prehended in others.’ ‘Doth not Scripture itself,’ says he, The Bible
‘note us unto the lyves of sundre vicious parsons’; to the end
that, ‘in vewynge the strange and grevous punishment which
‘ordinarily hath overwhelmed such sin,’ we may ‘learne
‘and labor to directe our lives by the contrary of their
‘examples’? Thus does Fenton anticipate the arguments
of the *Areopagitica*. With Milton he holds that without

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

INTRO- the knowledge of evil there can be 'no wisdom to choose,
DUCTION no continuance to forbear.' With Milton he maintains that
'he that can apprehend and consider vice, with all her baits
'and seeming pleasures, and yet abstain, and yet distinguish,
'and yet prefer that which is truly better, he is the true
'wayfaring Christian.'

Ascham's
attack

In spite of his high professions, and the cogency of his reasoning, Fenton's book did not escape censure at the hands of the more scrupulous sort. Not many months after the publication of the *Tragicall Discourses*, Roger Ascham, in his *Scholemaster*, made a violent attack upon those 'Italionated' Englishmen that brought to their native country 'the enchantements of Circes.' He was particularly violent in his censure of those who had translated, and published at home, the *novelle* of Italy. 'Of these ungratious 'bookes,' he says, 'many have been set in printe within 'these fewe moneths,' and 'are now sold in every shop in 'London.'¹ They are 'commended,' he adds, 'by honest 'titles the soner to corrupt honest maners'; and 'dedicated 'over boldlie to vertuous and honourable personages, the 'easelier to begile simple and innocent wittes.' But, in spite of their fair semblances, they 'allure yong willes and wittes to wantonnes,' and 'teach old bawdes new schole poyntes.'

¹ *Ascham*, 'The Scholemaster,' London, 1570, book 1. See Arber's 'Reprint,' London, 1870, pp. 78, 79, *et seq.* Jusserand ('The English Novel,' etc., pp. 74-76), strangely enough, includes the 'Cortegiano' amongst the Italian books at which Ascham's strictures were aimed; when, as a matter of fact, the author of 'The Scholemaster' held Castiglione's book in the highest esteem. This 'booke,' he said, 'advisedlic read, and diligentlic folowed but one yeare at home in England, would do a yong gentleman more good, I wisse, then three yeares travell abrode spent in Italic.'

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

Ascham was convinced, moreover, that the translation and circulation of such literature in England was part of a Romish plot 'to corrupt honest living and subvert true religion.' 'When the busie and open Papistes abroad,' he says, 'could not, by their contentious bookes, turne men in England fast enough, from troth and right judgement in doctrine, than the sutle and secret Papistes at home, procured bawdie bookes to be translated out of the Italian tonge, whereby over many yong willes do now boldly contemne all severe bookes that sounde to honestie and godlines.'

INTRO-
DUCTION
A Papist plot

That it was against Fenton that Ascham's attack was mainly directed there can be but little doubt. It was Fenton who, Puritan and theology-monger though he was, had ventured to suggest that the young and ignorant were not likely to be easily moved by 'the severe sentences of a reformed theologian.' He had dared, too, to dedicate his 'fond book' to a virtuous and honourable personage, for whom Ascham himself had a high regard. It was Fenton's book that was then being 'sold in every shop in London.' Beside the *Tragicall Discourses* but one other collection of Italian stories that we know of had been published in England—the first volume of Painter's *Palace of Pleasure*.

Fenton the
chief object
of Ascham's
attack

That a man of sense and intelligence, as Ascham undoubtedly was, should have conceived such suspicions of so staunch a young Protestant as Fenton, only shows what strange hallucinations a mind ordinarily well-balanced may become the prey to when it is infected by the *odium theologicum*. Just as in a later day many excellent people,

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

INTRO-
DUCTION

of quite average shrewdness, were wont to regard any movement, political, social, or religious, which they did not understand, or which they disliked, as the work of 'Jesuits in disguise,' so Ascham was ready to trace the handiwork of 'secrete Papistes' in any book which was not to his palate. Papistrie! the very word roused him like a trumpet. The mere sound of it filled him with fury of battle, and made him forget all reason, justice, and fairness. In his blind rage mistaking friend for foe, he rained wild blows on members of his own party; and, madder than that valiant knight of La Mancha, he tilted at one of the strong positions of the army whose champion he was. It was Ascham, not Fenton, who sought to subvert Protestant principles. It was Ascham, not Fenton, who endeavoured to bring Papist practices into England. It was Fenton, not Ascham, who was the more consistent Protestant of the two.

Ascham's in-
consistency

Biblical
methods of
teaching

'The Bible, and the Bible only,' said Chillingworth, 'is the religion of Protestants.' And in writing his book the young Fenton, as a pious Protestant, strictly adhered to Biblical methods of imparting moral instruction. 'The Bible itself,' as Milton said, 'ofttimes relates blasphemy 'not nicely,' and 'describes the carnal sense of wicked men 'not inelegantly.' The Book, in fact, is full of earthly stories, to which the faithful attach some heavenly meaning; and some of the tales to be found in the Hebrew scriptures are of exactly the same type as those of which Fenton's collection is composed. Therein are to be found the 'Tragicall Discourses' of Amnon and Tamar, of David and Bathsheba, of Dinah and Shechem, of the villainy of

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

the men of Gibeah. Therein, too, are to be found such 'pleasant and profitable comedies' as those of Boaz and Ruth, of Joseph and Potiphar's wife, of the Shulamite and her royal lover. From all these tales the devout Protestant draws profitable moral lessons. It was Ascham and his co-religionists who held that it was right and fitting that such histories should be read by young and old alike. 'An open Bible' was one of the rallying cries of the faction to which he belonged. And Ascham, in seeking to put down Fenton's book, could not but be regarded, by any consistent Protestant, as one of those 'fools who would teach men to read more decently than God thought good to write.'

INTRO-
DUCTION

'An open
Bible'

Moreover, in advocating the licensing of books, and in exhorting the licensers to rigour, Ascham himself was endeavouring to promote 'Papish' practices in England. For, as Milton shows us, it was the 'Papists' who were the inventors of licensing, or rather who were the first to suppress not only such books as contained heretical opinions, but also such as they conceived to be likely to conduce to immorality. Protestantism held, on the other hand, that 'to the pure all things are pure,' 'not only meats and drinks, but all kinds of knowledge, whether of good or evil.' And the Spirit of Protestantism might be represented as saying to the faithful those words which, according to Dionysius Alexandrinus, God spoke to him in a vision:—'Read any books whatever come to thy hands; for thou art sufficient both to judge aright and to examine each matter.'

Ascham an
advocate of
Papish prac-
tices

Protestant
principles

Had Ascham examined carefully the *Tragicall Dis-*

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

INTRO- DUCTION

Fenton an
earnest and
consistent
Protestant

The Bible
'the infallible
book,' and the
only guide in
matters of
faith

'The dyaboli-
call secte of
Rome'

The Puritan
conception of
woman's pro-
per position

courses, he would have no doubt become convinced of the orthodoxy of its author. It is clear, however, that, like certain inquisitorial schoolmasters of our own day, he did not take the trouble to read the book which he condemned. Fenton, in fact, throughout his whole career, at first with the pen and afterwards with the sword, was an earnest and consistent champion of the Protestant cause. His strong bias is abundantly displayed in the passages which he has interpolated in the text of this his first work. 'The Bible,' he says, 'is the infallible book; and its study ought to be the only exercise of those that are cladd in the habit of religion.' He never misses any opportunity for inserting a tirade against 'the Babylonian or dyabollcall secte of Rome,' and is perpetually abusing the Pope and the Catholic clergy. 'Abbaie men,' he says, 'carry the devil in the cowle of their hoods.' He thanks God that the realm of England is now 'happely purged of suche filthe, and replenished with a plentiful crewe of th' undowted ministers of God's Word.' But in nothing does he show more clearly his Puritan prejudices than in his frequent pronouncements on such subjects as the position of woman, the government of wives, and the education of children. Like many Englishmen who have held the same creed, he is pestilently didactic and oracular, especially when treating of topics of this class. After the fashion of the Puritan pamphleteers of the following age, he is for ever discoursing on the inconstancy of women, their wantonness, their proneness to folly. He is continually seeking to convince married men of the importance of 'keeping a tight rein upon this kynde of cattall,' and of seeing that their wives 'abide

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

‘continually in awe of them.’ ‘For,’ says he, ‘if they get
‘once the bit between their teethe, and crop of the hearbe
‘of ryotus will, it is harder to reclayme them, eyther by
‘awe, feare, compulsion, or gentle entreatie, then the wilde
‘haggard, or rammish falcon, by any connyng or devise of
‘their keper.’ ‘Women,’ he declares, ‘have their being in
‘this world for no other respect then to depende upon the
‘will of men.’ They are ‘derived from the imperfection
‘of men,’ and ‘ordained from the beginning to be their
‘vassals.’ Hence, in Fenton’s opinion, ‘the chiefest virtue
‘in a woman is to be obedient to her husband, and to be
‘continually under the yoke of his awe.’ If any wife should
fail in this respect, her lord has the remedy in his own
hands. He must ‘show himself worthy of the authority
‘given him by God and nature in exposing the rodd of cor-
‘rection.’ Fenton, in fact, like other of his co-religionists,
is a most conscientious wife-beater, and strongly disapproves
of the leniency of Italian husbands. ‘He that dwelleth
‘wyth his wyfe according to knowledge,’ says a representa-
tive divine of that school, ‘endeavoureth to beate the feare
‘of God into her heade, if she be not obedient and helpful
‘unto him, that thereby she may be compelled to learne
‘her duty and doe it.’ Fenton, like John Rogers, had a
most profound belief in the efficacy of this means of correct-
ing the waywardness of ‘the sect femenyne.’ He held that
this severe treatment should commence whilst the ‘flicker-
ing creatures’ were still in their infancy. ‘These ympes,’
he says, ‘have follye tyed on their backes. They be more
‘apt to decline than any other creature. Therefore the
‘tutours of lytle girles must not forgett to offer theym the

INTRO-
DUCTION

Women
ordained to
be men’s
vassals

Fenton a
conscientious
wife-beater

Matthew’s
Bible

‘The secte
femenyne’

‘The rodd of
correction’

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

INTRO- 'racke and tormentes of the rodde; which you must minister
DUCTION 'unto them in the greenes of their yeres and affore the
'tendrenes of youthe, with wante of discretion, will suffer
'theim to discern their oune inclinacioun.' Next to the
'rodd of correction,' he regards incessant toil as the best
prophylactic against the many moral maladies with which
vain woman so easily becomes infected. 'Women,' he says,
'ought to kepe their bodyes accompanied with contynual
'travayle.' As a 'recreacion,' he regards 'the use of the
'the use of
'the nedle'
'Daunsing'
condemned
'nedle' as the most suitable for women. 'Daunsing,' and
such-like 'fonde practises,' he declares to be 'disciplines
devised within the scoole of Sathan.' It is true that in
making this last pronouncement he is but translating the
words of Belleforest: nevertheless we may regard it as
representing his own views on the matter, as he never
scruples to alter or omit any statement of the French
writer with which he does not agree.

But fond as Fenton is of usurping the office of a preacher,
his interpolations in the text of the *Discourses* do not
wholly, or even mainly, consist of Puritan dogmatisings.
By carefully collating his translations with the same stories
as told by Belleforest, we find many additions of a very
different order. Inveterate moraliser though he was, he
was also an artist, and had in no small measure certain
great artistic qualities. His book has neither the vices
nor the virtues of the average modern translation. He
was not scrupulously accurate, nor did he attempt in any
way to represent in English the style of the original writer;
but his work has a strength and freedom which no ordinary
translation possesses.

Fenton as
an artist

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

INTRO-
DUCTION

In him 'the imaginative reason' is continually active. He does not only, like some Elizabethan translators, embroider the text with precious phrases and epithets. He does not merely add, here and there, some curious simile, some allusion to classical history or mythology. He realises each story for himself, and tells it in his own way; and in the very texture of the narrative he introduces sensuous touches which reveal to us how much more he was than a translator. In narrating, for instance, the history of Julia, that pathetic tale which Bandello had, no doubt, first heard from the gracious lips of his friend Castiglione, he tells us that, in the course of the dance, the gallant of Ferrara 'failed not to graspe the hand' of the girl 'as often as he durst.' In his description of the final scene of the tragedy, too, Fenton adds to its effectiveness by representing Julia as kissing her sister before she throws herself into the Oglio. Again, in that very tragical history of 'A younge Ladye in Millan,' the whole of the passage relating to the first secret meeting of Pandora and Parthenope is full of added incident. The lady, for example, forgets not 'to seale the bargaine' 'with sundry sortes of kysses, and other homlye trickes of familiaritie.' The knight, too, fails not 'humbly to honour' 'her bare brestes' 'wyth the often print of his mouthe.' There are several similar additions in the amusing account of the 'perills happenyng to a younge gentleman of Myllan in the pursute of his ladie.' This austere young Puritan, also, describes with more fulness of detail than either Bandello or Belleforest the legerdemains used at Pavia by that 'fair souldier of Venus,' the Countess of Celant. To each story, in fact,

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

INTRO- he imparts some of the fire and freshness of an original
DUCTION work.

Fenton's
vocabulary

Fenton's vocabulary is very copious, and he boldly makes use of words gathered from all kinds of sources. We find in the *Tragicall Discourses* many words borrowed from French and Italian, as well as from Greek and Latin. Some of these, such as 'catterres,' 'calibre,' 'symptomes,' 'catalogue,' 'anotomy,' ultimately came into common use. Others, such as 'lymytrophall,' 'escarfion,' 'darioletta,' 'tyntamar,' 'denier,' 'bourreau,' 'sympathia' (in the Italian sense of the word), and 'marmotta,' were never Anglicised. The word 'collcaryour' (messenger), which he adapted from the French, and which he uses several times, is only to be found, I believe, in this book; and, so far as I can discover, he is the first English writer to employ the word 'horley borley.' It was owing no doubt to the influence of the Pleiad that he introduced into his text several Greek words, such as 'polologos,' 'diabolos,' and 'dermopterae.'

In the *Tragicall Discourses* there are many expressive words which have now become obsolete. Amongst words of this class are 'elne,' 'jonkyng,' 'huishyng,' 'curtalls,' 'pavisinge,' 'nestcockle,' 'dyamantyn,' and 'mockhallyday.'

A euphuist
before
Euphues

Fenton painted from a full palette. He handled, too, his material, for the most part, with considerable force and sincerity. Nevertheless, there are passages here and there in his work in which he employs those *précieuses* mannerisms which ultimately became so popular amongst the prose writers of Elizabeth's Court. And though he was

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

much more moderate in his use of such affectations than was Lyly or even Gascoigne, he must be regarded as one of the founders of euphuism—a euphuist before Euphuus.

Some modern critics have represented Antonio de Guevara as the originator of this *mode* of expression. But whilst there can be little doubt that the Spanish writer's *El Relox de Principes* played an important part in the gradual evolution of this style, there were other influences at work scarcely less potent. Euphuism, in fact, was merely one phase of a movement which had its adherents in France and in Italy as well as in Spain and in England, and the origin of which cannot be traced to any one source. Fenton, it is true, was already a student of Guevara when he wrote the *Tragicall Discourses*, and but a short time after its publication he produced his *Golden Epistles*, which consisted largely of passages translated from the Spaniard's great work; but in the formation of his style he was as much influenced by Belleforest and other prose writers of the Pleiad as by the Bishop of Guadix.

In Fenton's book are to be found all the characteristics of euphuism—elaborate antithesis, alternate alliteration, the frequent employment of the rhetorical question, and an extravagant use of metaphors largely borrowed from natural history. Alliteration, indeed, was a very common trick amongst writers of that time—even plain, unaffected Roger Ascham makes constant use of it; but *transverse* alternate alliteration is a distinguishing mark of euphuism, and examples of this peculiar mannerism are not uncommon in Fenton's prose. He alludes, for example, to the secte femenyne as 'that flattering crew of flickeringe creatures.'

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

INTRO- DUCTION

Similes drawn
from natural
history

He asserts that Pandora was 'drowned in the filthy desire of the flesh.' Again, his use of metaphor is peculiarly euphuistic. He makes frequent allusion to 'herbs or beasts which Ind or Affrike hold.' He speaks, for instance, of the cameleon which is 'norished by the breath of the ayre.' He tells us of 'the loving rage of the she ape towards her yonge ones.' He describes, too, very prettily, the dying swan. 'The nearer,' he says, 'she draweth to the ende of her destiny, the pleasanter note she synges, bathinge and 'pruninge herselfe in the purest streame she can fynde, to 'th'ende to do honor to her funerall fate.' We are also introduced to the 'salamandre,' the 'basilike' or cockatrice, the scorpion, the elephant, the 'tygre' and the 'libarde.' It is true that many of the animals in this curious collection are to be found in Belleforest, but Fenton certainly makes a more frequent use of such similes than the French writer. In seeking to prove, for example, that some women are reformed rather 'by faire intreaity' than 'by feare or force of torments,' he interpolates the following passage:—'The fierce elephant standes not in awe of his keeper by force of any stripes, but is made tractable to bende his lardge bodie whilest he mounthe upon his backe, by certeine familiar voices and stroakinges of his keper, wherewith he overcometh the naturall rudenes and crueltie of the beaste. The tygre will take foode at the handes of the wildman, norished in the caves and desert habitacions amongst theim, where no stripes nor other awe of man can move any moderacion to his wodnes or cruell nature.' On the very same page, too, he introduces an allusion 'to the stone of Seylicia, uppon whom the more you beate to

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

‘bruse or breake yt in peces, the greater hardnes is driven
‘into it.’

INTRO-
DUCTION

Fenton, however, frequently forgets all such mannerisms, and writes with great simplicity and directness. In the second *Discourse*, for example, that dialogue between Cornelia and Camilla, in which the former reveals to her friend the secret of Livio's solitary mode of life, is remarkable for its point and briskness. The story of Cornelio and Plaudina contains more than one excellent narrative passage.¹ Very picturesque, too, is Fenton's description of Fynea's visit to the witches. ‘Discending,’ he says, ‘into the vale of Camonika,’ she ‘gat, by the helpe of those sprites and lymmes of the devill inhabytynge that hellish ylande, certayne flowers gathered in the waine of the moone, wyth droagues and other tromperie of witchecrafte, requisite for conjurers and suche as occupye the pernicious trade of enchauntynge.’ And how beautiful is his description of death!—‘And as sone as we have taken possession of the house of reste, he shooteth the gates of all annoye againste us, fedinge us, as it were, with a swete slomber or pleasant sleepe, until the last summonce of generall resurrection.’

It was not Fenton's part, as it was of some translators in that age, only to serve as a conduit to convey to his own land some portion of those fertilising streams which, in our tardy English springtime, caused the seeds of genius to spring up and bear fruit. Nor did he merely reflect, as a mirror, some of the light and warmth of Italy. His work had, as has been said, its own specific artistic virtues. His was an interesting personality, and he had in no small

¹ Vol. i. pp. 227, 233-236.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

INTRO- measure the power of expressing himself. It is curious,
DUCTION therefore, that his book has been so much overlooked of
late; for it certainly deserves to be read, not merely by
students of the sources of our dramatic literature, but also
by all those who are interested in the evolution of English
prose style; as well as by that larger class who delight to
read old tales of passion, stories of ‘lovyng ladyes haples
haps, theyr deaths, and deadly cares.’

R. L. DOUGLAS.

NOTE

*This Edition of the Tragical
Discourses is reprinted from
the Editio Princeps of
1567*

C E R T A I N E
T R A G I C A L L D I S C O U R S E S
W R I T T E N O U T E O F F R E N C H E A N D L A T I N
B Y G E F F R A I E F E N T O N

N O L E S S E P R O F I T A B L E T H E N P L E A S A U N T ,
A N D O F L I K E N E C E S S I T Y E T O A L D E G R E E S
T H A T T A K E P L E A S U R E I N A N T I Q U I T Y E S
O R F O R R E I N E R E A P P O R T E S .

Mon heur viendra.

1 5 6 7

TO THE RIGHTE HONORABLE AND VERTUOUS LADIE,
 THE LADYE MARYE SYDNEY,
 GEFFRAYE FENTON Wisheth a happie encesse
 of honor and yeares in this lyfe.



NICEPHORUS, an historiographer of greate
 creditt amongst the Grekes, affirmeth,
 that as everye knowledge of it selfe deserveth
 commendacion, so the discipline of histories is
 most agreable and necessarie for all ages: which
 the Roman orator Marcus Cicero full well
 approveth, in commending the studie therof to
 all degrees and times as an exercise of most
 necessitye and honor: for that, saith he, in
 them is represented, as yt were, an ymage
 or pourtraict of all thinges that have passed
 since the beginning of the worlde, together
 with diversitie of instructions to all sortes
 of people touchinge their direction in future
 chaunces, even untill the laste and extreame
 dissolution of the same; not doutinge also
 in his firste booke, *De Oratore*, to add
 certeine peculiar titles, callinge an historie
 ‘testis temporis, lux veritatis, vita memoriae,
 magistra vitae, et nuncia vetus stas.’ ‘For if
 a man be younge,’ saith he, ‘the readyng
 thereof will make hym old, not in yeares,
 wich the most parte cold be content to shyfte
 of and forgo, but in experience and wisdom.’
 And if he bee alreddie loaden wythe the
 heavie burden of nature, what a pleasure
 is it then to beholde the thinges whiche
 eyther he hath passed in youth, or long
 before his time were put in practise.

A witness
 or cronicler
 of tymes, a
 candle to the
 trothe, the
 life of the
 memorie, the
 maister of a
 man's life, and
 the reaperter
 of all anti-
 quities.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

THE EPISTLE DEDICA- TORY

'Iucundi
acti labores.'

'Nescire quid
antequam
natus sis
acciderit est
semper esse
puerum.'

Lyvye.

Histories a
librarie or
store house of
knowledg.

Whereof, as the first is veraye well proved by Euripides the Poett sainge that the remembrance of the paine that is past is sweete; so the oppinion of Tullye, touchinge the other, perswades a great necessitie to all degrees to be prevye to the commoditie of stories. 'For,' saith he, 'to be ignoraunt in things happened or thou waste borne, is as much to say as thou wilt be alwaies a child.'

There is required in all estates both a faithe and a feare in God, and also an outwarde pollecie in wordly thinges: wherof, according to the philosophers, the one is to bee learned by perusinge the Scripture, and the other can not bee gotten but by the assistance of histories, who are the onelye and true tables whereon are drawne in perfect coolers the vertues and vices of everye condicion of man, bothe their florishynge tyme, whileste they embraced the first, and miserable fal when they grew in delite with the wickedness of the last. Yf a man be a magistrate, or beare authoritie in publike affaires, what labor is better bestowed then in searchinge the actes of suche as have supplied equall dignitie and place, to accomodate himselfe to their vertues? And, to the privat person, antiquitie gives choice of admonicions for obedience to his superiors, with charge to applie and employe all his care for the commoditie of his countreye. Yf he bee a citizen, he shall there fynde what belongeth to his proper office, eyther in the service of his publike weal or in his peculiar affaires at hoame. And to a woman, what stoare of examples are there to instructe her in her dutie, eyther for the married to kepe her fayth to her husband, with Lucretia, or the unmarried to defend her virginitye, with Virginya. Fynalle, that excellent treasure and full librarie of all knowledge yeldes us frelye presidentes for all cases that maye happen; both for imytacion of the good, detestyng the wycked, avoydyinge a present mischiefe, and preventyng any evil afore yt fall. Wherein also, as in every acte, there bee certeine speciall principles and rules for the direction of suche as searche out their disposition, so histories do swarme with examples of all kinde of vertues, wherein both the dignitie of vertue and fowlnes of vice appereth muche more lyvelye then in any morall teachyng; seinge therein

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

THE
EPISTLE
DEDICA-
TORY

is figured under certeine formes and shaps of men and their doyngs past, al and every such diversitye and change, which philosophie doth teach by waie of preceptes. Like as also, touchinge the commodotytes to be cooled oute of antiquityes, Lyvye is of oppinyon that the pleasure and proffitt falleth out of indifferent value to suche as bestowe theyr tyme, wythe uprighte judgement, in the viewe of auncient recordes; for, saith he, 'nihil est aptius ad delectationem lectoris, quam temporum varietates fortunaequae vicissitudines cognoscere, quae etsi exoptabilis in experiendo, non fuerunt tamen in legendo sunt jocunda.' And the frute and chiefe gayne derived of such traveile is in that wee shall see set furthe good and whoalsome lessons of all sortes, whereof wee maye take to ourselves and benefyt of our countreye, suche as we like to followe; and which presentes unto us the true picture and reapport of suche enterprises as had both sinister begynnynge and much worse endes. And yet is yt not sufficient for us to judge that the only frute consistes in readynge the noble actes of good men, seinge that (of the contrarye) to those that studye to resemble theyr vertues th'eschewynge of the evill partes in a number of vicious personnes is a singular commodityte: whiche, yf it were not so, the continuance of so many hundreth yeares in all common states, as wel heathen as Christened, had not permitted the reading of sondrye Poetes, whose commodities and tragedies import a description figuratyve of the wicked lives of all degrees of men and women; wythout intent to perswade any ymitation that waye, but rather to provoke the multitude, by familiar traines, to avoyde such condicions as they sawe justely reprehended in others. And truly wyth better reason may a man put to the viewe of the worlde any auncient reapport whose profession is to declare a truthe, then to prefer the fained tales of Poetes, whiche yet we see for diverse good respectes tollerated to bee redd in all ages. For lyke as in a familye or auncient house, who hath bene most renowned of all the stocke leaveth a president and desyer to his posterityte to resemble his doynge, as a glasse and mirroir to theym of most excellent vertues; so, when his stories are published to the common proffyt of al men, every

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

THE
EPISTLE
DEDICA-
TORY

one goethe aboute to confirme himselfe to the vertuous conversation and lyfe of suche as excelled amongst the elders. Wherein, me seameth, Nycephorus saied veray well that those whiche write Histories and keepe not that which is profitable and praiseworthy as it were in their stoare house at hoame, but rather, beinge benefyciall to the common welthe, do expose so common a profitt to the generall commoditie of all men, are (as it were) the executours of Gods divine providence; because they comprise and packe upp in one worke or volume, as in a common treasure, sondrye sortes of noble deedes, without inhibition or lett to any degree to resorte thereunto and learn, by other mens misdeeds, to direct better his owne doinges, and not with the exchange of the worlde to alter also his minde, but rather, as muche as lyeth in hym, to ymitate the lyfe and conversation of theym who have lyved well before. Wherein, seinge in this worlde the nature of man in all ages, although the singler personnes bee chaunged, remaineth stil one; so, also, the good fortunes, felicities, calamities, and miseries, whyche happen, both in publike government and to everye private state, tourne alwayes to one effect, and are lyke those of tymes paste; so that, by the benefyt of stories, presentinge afore oure eyes a true kallender of things of auncient date, by the commendacion of vertuous and valyaunt personnes and actes, we be drawn by desyer to treade the stepps of their renownme. And on the other syde, considering the sinister fortune and horrible cases which have happened to certeine miserable soules, we behold both th' extreme points whereunto the fraile condicion of man is subject by infirmitie; and also are thereby taughte, by the viewe of others mens harmes, to eschew the like inconveniences in ourselves. Wherein (righte honorable) like as I have rather touched sleightelye then used tearmes of commendacion at large, according to the worthynes of so precious a jewell as the knowledg of histories—for that now a dayes every mans mouth is open to commende the frute distilling from so florishynge a vine—so, for my part, beyng more forward then hable to discharge my zeale in that behalfe, have bestowed some of my voyed howers, whilst I was in the

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

other sides the Sea, in forcyng certeyne Tragical Discourses oute of theyr Frenche tearmes into our Englishe phrase, presumyng to commende unto your Ladishypp the frutes and effecte of my travayle; folowyng therein the order of suche as have spent tyme in the lyke studye, who are wounte to declare theyr good wyll, by bestowing theyr iabours. Wherewithe, beinge unhappelye denyed other frendshypp of fortune to make good my desyer in gyving an unfayned showe of the dutye and service I owe you and the house whereof you took youre begynnyng, am here, uppon tearmes of humilitey, for preferment of this rude and simple dedication of theis forrein reapports to youre honor. To whose vertues, as I have chieflye respected to gyve due renowme, by preferrynge a true purtraict of your conversation and lyfe in the vertues, gifts, and ornamentes, of the noble Angeliqua, chaste Parolyna, constant Iulia, and renowned Carmosina, with others, whose integretye of lyfe hath gyven them a crowne of immortalitye, wyth a glorious remembrance of theyr names for ever after theyr deathe; so my seconde endeavor was bent to observe the necessitie of the tyme; chiefly for that, uppon the viewe and examples of oure auncesters lyves, the fraile ymps of this age maye finde cause of shame in theyr owne abuses, wyth desyer to exchange their badd condicion and order of lyvyng wyth the studye and desyer to ymitate the vertue of their predecessours, whose lyfe and renowme after death argueth the undoubted rewarde attendyng (as a thyng of course) the vertuose and well disposed: whereof, the contrarye, appeare wouderfull tormentes and sharpp pennaunce, provided to plage the abbominable and vicious lyver. Besides, it is a principle and chiefe rule in our nature and disposition to bee rather instructed by examples of familiar authorites then reformed by severitey of lawes; for that the one seames to governe us by awe and commaundement, and in the other appeares a consent of our fancie, marchinge alwayes accordyng to the direction of our owne willes. For whiche cause, the Historians of olde tyme (in theyr severall recordes of the actes, conquestes, and noble attemptes, of Princes and greate men) have lefte oute nothyng servyng

THE
EPISTLE
DEDICA-
TORY

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

THE
EPISTLE
DEDICA-
TORY

for the ornamente and institution of mannes lyfe; not forgettyng to sett oute also in naturall coollers theyr tyrannye, and other vices, wythe contempte of vertue, yf theyr lyves were founde guiltye in any suche offence. But when they paynte oute a good kynge, a magistrate without touch of partiall or covetous mynde, a courtyar loyall and withoute dissimulation, a minister of the Churche, not smellynge of hypocrysye, but searchyng purelye the honour of God, a ladye chaste, honeste, curteouse, a lover of charitye, usyng a devoute reverence to God and feare to hys lawes—yt is then that they allure, by traines of familiaritye, every succession, to embrace and beholde, as in a glasse, the undoubted meane that is hable, and wyll, brynge theym to the like perfection in vertue. Whyche, also, moved me to use a speciall discrecion in coollyng oute suche examples as beste agreed wyth the condicion of the tyme, and also were of moste freshe and familiar memorye; to the ende that, wyth the delyte in readyng my dedication, I maye also leave, to all degrees, an appetitt and honeste desyere to honor vertue and holde vice in due detestation. And, albeit, at the firste sighte, theis discourses maye importe certeyne vanytyes or fonde practises in love, yet I doubt not to bee absolved of suche intente by the judgement of the indifferent sorte, seinge I have rather noted diversitie of examples in sondrye younge men and women, approvyng sufficientlye the inconvenience happenyng by the pursute of lycenceous desyer, then affected in anye sorte suche uncerteyne follyes. For heare maye be seene suche patternes of chastetye, and maydes so assured and constant in vertue, that they have not doubted rather to reappose a felicitye in the extreme panges of death then to fall by anye violent force into the daunger of the fleshe-lye enemye to theyr honour. In lyke sorte appeareth here an experience of wouderfull vertues in men; who, albeit hadd power to use and commande the thinge they chieflye desyered, yet, bridlyng wythe the maine haude, the humour of theyr inordinate luste, vanquished all mocions of sensualitye, and became maisters of theym selves, by abstaynyng from that whereunto they felte provocation by nature.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

THE
EPISTLE
DEDICA-
TORY

Who desyereth to see the follye of a foolishe lover, passionyng hymselfe uppon creditt, the impudencie of a maide, or other woman, renouncyng the vowe of her fayth or honor due to virginitye, the sharpp pennance attendyng the rashe choice of greate ladyes in seekyng to matche in anye sorte wythe degrees of inferior condicion; or who wisheth to bee privie to th' inconveniences in love, howe he frieth in the flame of the fyrste affection, and after, groweth not onelye colde of himselfe, but is caselye converted into a contrarye shapp and disposition of deadlye hate—maye bee heare assisted wyth more than double experience touchinge all those evils. The curtesie of an enemye on the behalfe of his adversarye, wythe a wouderfull lyberalitye in the other in retournyng the benefyt receyved, is heare set furthe in suche lyvelye coollers, that there seames to lacke nothyng for the ornament and decoracion of suche a worke. And who takes pleasure to beholde the fyttes and panges of a frantique man, incensed to synister conceites by the suggestion of frettyng jelouzye, forcyng hym to effectes of absolute desperation; the due plage of disloyaltye, in both kyndes, with the glorye of hym who marcheth under the enseigne of a contrarye vertue; a man of the churche, of dissolute lyving, punished with publike reproche; or the villenie of the greedye usurer, makyng no conscience to preferr oppen perjury in suppressyng th' innocent cause,—maye fynde here to satisfye his longyng at full. Neyther do I thinke that oure Englishe recordes are hable to yelde at this daye a *Romant* more delicat and chaste, treatyng of the veraye theames and effectes of love, then theis hystories, of no lesse credit then sufficient authoritie, by reason the moste of theym were within the compasse of memorye. Wherein, as I, with the tormentes that pinched here suche as labored in a passion of follye and fond desyer, maye worke a terror to all those that hereafter unhappelye syp of the cupp of suche ragyng infection, so, touchyng the commendable partes of anye ladye or woman of meaner condicion mencioned in this volume of discourses, I fynde theym farr to lighte to kepe wayghte wyth the ballance wherein are raised the qualities of your honor; whyche

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

THE
EPISTLE
DEDICA-
TORY

seame to have a certeyne affinitye and resemblance wyth suche as were the verye vertuse, and causes of commendacion, in any that ever deserved the title of 'moste perfect,' or 'justlye renommed.' For, yf ever the Quene of Carya was meritorious for her magnanimytye and bountifull disposition, the quene of Saba—which some writers call Nycaula, and other Manquedæ—was had in honor for her wysedome (whiche was suche that both the olde and newe testament affirme that she traveled from the ende of the worlde, and extreme confynes of the land of Iuda, to come and heare the doctrine of Salomon, wyth whome she disputed no less learnedly then wyth profonde judgement), or if the constant Ladye Blandina, a Christian borne in the harte of Europe, hath purchased a crowne of eternetye in keepinge her fayth and vowe to God and the worlde, even to the last seperacion of her sowle and bodye; or yf any other, eyther of antiquitye or familiar experience, of what degree and condicion so ever, have bene noted of renomme for the gyfte of nobilitye in anye sorte—your Ladishipp maye boldelye challenge place wyth the best; cyther for moderate governement, whose effectes in all thynges you attempte, argue your worthie participacion with the excellent gyftes of temperance and wonderful modestie in the ii moste famous Erles of Leicester and Warwike, your brotherne, and moste vertuous and renommed Ladye, the Countesse of Huntington, your sister; to whose glorie, and general love amongst all sortes of people in this lande, I nede not add further circumstance, or increase of praise, considerynge the whole state, fixinge theyr eyes uppon theym, wyth an unfained zeale and admiracion of their wysdome and vertues, do advouche in more ample sorte their good will that waye then I am eyther worthie or hable to declare: and for your clemencie to the case of the afflicted, uprighte dealyng, wythout exaction or cause of grudge to any, wonderfull respecte to the honor of your callynge, wyth dutyfull awe and feare of Godd, and obedience to my Lord your husbände, or other arguements or effects wherein consistes the praise of a vertuous mind, or ought to appeare the frutes of true nobilitie—they make you, not so muche honored in your

Executed for
religion in
Fraunce, by
the Emperor
Severus, in
the yere 178.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

contreye, as embrased of strangers who never sawe nor knewe you but by name ; who also doubtte not to make your sincere and devout order of lvyngge a lookynge glasse to beholde and followe your vertues, and by your order of doing to draw the plat and foundation of their owne life. Which shal suffice for this tyme (good madam) for the commendation of that whiche is sufficiently perfect of it self, and so generallie honored of all degrees that it nede not th' assistance of any peculiar praise ; humblie craving, for my part, a priviledge of favor at your handes, so farfurthe as it maye bee lawfull for me to laye theis firste frutes of my travel uppon the alter alredeye garnished wyth other oblacions of your everlasting glorye, as a remembrance of an humble sacrifice whiche I make of my litle labor and contynuall service vowed to your Ladishipp, so longe as God and nature will allow my abode in this miserable vale.

THE
EPISTLE
DEDICA-
TORY

At my chamber at Paris, xxii Iunii, 1567.

Your Ladiship's to commaunde,

GEFFRAYE FENTON.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

SYR IOHN CONWAY, KNYGHT,
to the readers, in prayse of the
Translator.

*Like as the slender bee, by travayle in her kynde,
Collects her fruite, the sugred sap wherof we dayly fynde,
So heare my learned friend, in nature lyke the bee,
Hath linckt his labor to his art and yeldes the frute to the.
In tongue estraunged from us, whyles this succedyng worke,
(As doth the honye in the floure) by covert meane dyd lurke,
He, laborynge with effecte, hath, by his learned payne,
Enforst a Frenche man tell his tale in Englishe language plaine.
Not for himself, thou knowest, it answered his delyght,
By skylle to understande the tale us dyd the auctor write,
But, toylynge for thy syke, hath fourm'd his hyve ful fine.
Take thou the combe: the payne was his: the honye shal be
thyne.*

*Good reader yet beware, lest spyder lyke thou take,
By cancred kynde, a spightfull styng, whence he did honye
make.*

*Let not, in lewe of payne, a tongue compleate with spyte
Attempt to harme (though powere shal want) the thing that he
doth writ:*

*For if thou dost, the wies will feele thy festred kinde;
And he to whom thou dost such wronge shal so thy nature finde.
No doubt our dayes are suche as every man can see,
And can at ease, and wyll, perceave the spider from the bee.
Allowe his labour, then, and worke that well is done,
And thou shalt see thee golden race his muse pretends to roon.
Let Zoilus suck the teute that Envie holdes in hell,
And say with me, 'God spede the penn that hath begone so
well.'*

*Thus hath he his desyre. Thus shalt thou lyve in rest.
Thus shall his frynds have, at thy hands, the sume of their
request.*

IOHN CONWAY.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

Amici cuiusdam, ad Authorem Carmen Hexametrum.

Floruit antiquo Galfridus tempore Chaucer
Scripsit et eximio permagna volumina versu
Et multi viguere viri quos unica virtus,
Nefandos facile effecit tolerare labores.
Vixerunt : et sola manet, nunc fama Sepultis.
At tua nunc primum, (Galfride) virescere virtus
Incipit, et teneras cum spe producere plantas :
Quæ (scio) quàm primum radices cœperit altos,
Efferet egregios, cum magno fœnore, fructus.
Ergo quisquis erit, qui fortè revolverit ista,
(Cuius mens livore ne quit nec amore moveri,
Et sapit) haud dubito quin te dignabitur illa
Laude, tuo quam tu magno sudore parasti.
Sin minus : hoc uno tibi sat (Fentone) tulisti,
Quod Domina est cui des, dono dignissima tanto,

Tuus M. H.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

GEORGE TURBERVILLE

in praise of the translator of this booke.

*If handy craftsmen have' greate praise for working well
By toylyng trade the trifling wares which they for money sel,
Then why should Fenton feare' to purchase prayse of men,
To whom he franckely gyves the gift of this his pleasant pen?
If he his busyc browe have beate for our awayle,
And for our pleasure taken paynes, why should his guerdon
fayle?*

*No gredye golden fee, no jem or jewell brave,
But, of the reader, good reporte, this writer longes to have.
No man of meanest witt, no beast of slender brayne,
That thinckes that such a volume great is wrought with slender
payne.*

*The thinge it selfe declares' what toyle he undertooke,
Ere Fentons curious fyle could frame this passing pleasant
booke.*

*The Frenche to Englishe phrase, his mother language, hee,
The darke to lighte, the shade to sonne, hath brought, as you
may see.*

*The learned stories erste, and sugred tales that laye
Removde from simple common sence, this writer doth displaye.
And what, before hee tooke' his painfull quyll to write,
Did lurcke unknown, is playnelic now to be discerned in sight.
Nowe men of meanest skill, what Bandel wrought, maye see,
And tell the tale in Englishe well that erste they never knewe,
Discourse of sundrye strange' and tragicall affaires,
Of lovyng ladyes haples haps, theyr deathes, and deadly cares;
And dyvers thinges beside, whereby to flee the darte
Of vyle deceytfull Cupids bowe, that woundes the lovers harte.
Synce this by Fentons meane, and travayle, thou dost gayne
(Good reader) yeld hym earned prayse and thanckes for taken
paine.*

*Then I that made this verse' shall thincke as well of the
As Fentons worke doth well deserve accompted of to be.*

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

PETER BEVERLEY

in praise of the translator.

Ryfe is the rule that blames the idell mynde,
The ground as great that blaseth travels gayn :
Each tonge can tell a world of vyces kynd,
And scaired lynes appoints offences payne :
But Fenton showes, in swete and sugred stile,
What pleasaunt bayte doth each estate beguile.

What carelesse youth that sees the toylyng ant,
But shames to weare his goulden tyme in vayne ;
Whose tender lymmes in sommer tyme do haunt
The fruitfull felds, to rest in Borias Rayne ;
When she doth sucke the swete of heruest toyle,
And fynds, in frost, relefe in dryed soyle.

The slender store that som do now possesse
Whose idell boones did loth in youth the lode,
To those that lyve suffyseth to express
The loytring child in age knows no abode ;
But as the shippe tost with the byllow greate
So he doth yelde him selfe to fortunes threte.

What pride deserves, what is blacke hatreds hiere,
What envye, theft, what is the mysers mede,
In fyne, what fowle offence, what fact so dire,
But scripture showes his rights if thou list rede,
Wherby each may, both shunne the vilest sinne,
And learne such lyfe as lasting joye doth winn.

But Fenton's frame hath woven another webbe,
His paynfull penn hath died a straunger hewe.
He tels when witt is in his lowest ebbe,
And warns the shunne the bayne that coms by viewe ;
Which so doth chaunge the sence of every wight
That from a man to beast it tournes him quitt.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

As when the mynd, through want of reasons rayne,
Unbridled yelds to fond affection's force,
And feding still the hart with amours vayne,
Convert each part unto a sencles cors,
Wherin he lyves, so odde from right and lawe
As mountayn beare that prayes devoyd of awe.

And subject thus unto swete folyes lore,
If wishe he winne, he shows what sower swete
The pacient suckes, what bytter blisse in store
He heapes, when age with judgment just shall mete,
When prose shall saye, of all unhappyest wight!
That reapest care, in lyew of hopte delight.

But if disdayne shall quyt him with dispyght,
And yeld him loth for long desired grace,
Then stabbing glayve the desperat brest must smyte,
Or frantycke wyse runne out a savage race.
Thus if of gladd or sad he happ the gayne,
Both have this end : in love nought is but vayne.

Which reckles race, to bring in wisdoms guyde,
And for to raine with bytt of better skill,
My paynfull frend did this discours provide,
As brake to breake affections lawles will.
Gyve Fenton then but freuts of his desert,
And gather thou that best maye please thy hart.

P. B.

THE TABLE

DISCOURSE I

A wonderfull vertue in a gentleman of Sienna on the behalfe of
his enimie, whome he delivered from death : and the other,
to retorne his courtesye with equall frendshipp, presented
hym wyth his syster, whome he knewe he loved entierlie, . 17

DISCOURSE II

The longe and loyal love betwene Lyvio and Camylla, together
wyth theyr lamentable death : the one dyenge of a passion of
joye the firste nighte he embraced his mistrys in bedd, the
other passed also the same waye as overcome with present
sorowe for the death of him whome she loved no lesse then
her selfe, 85

DISCOURSE III

A younge Ladye in Myllan, after she had longe abused the vertue
of her youth and honor of mariage with an unlawfull haunte
of diverse yonge gentlemen, becomes an unnaturall morderor
of the frute of her wombe, for that she was forsaken of him
who gatt her with childe, 129

DISCOURSE IV

An Albanoise Captayne beyng at the point to dye killed his wyf,
because no man sholde enioye her beautie after his death, . 163

DISCOURSE V

Sondrye perills happenyng to a younge Gentleman of Myllan in
the pursute of his Ladie, 193

DISCOURSE VI

The villanie of an Abbot in seeking to seduce a mayde by force,
and her vertue in defending her honor against him and his
companions of trayson, 247

B*

DISCOURSE

I

A wonderful Vertue in a gentlman of Syenna on the behalf of his ennemye, whom he delivered from Death ; and the other, to retorne his courtesye with equall frendshyp, presented him with his sister, whom he knew hee loved entierlye.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE I

THE ARGUMENT

Hannibal forced a passage for his army through the Alpes.

Ingratitude the chiefest enemy to the honor of nobility.

I MEANE not here to increase the merveile of menne with a particular description of the sumptuous buildinges of Princes, the magnificall scites and scituations of greate men's houses, nor restore to memory the wouderfull pollecies and artificiall devises of oure auncestoures, in making plats, and firme fondacions of castels and cities, in the bottom of the sea; and muche lesse trouble you with a reaporte of their ingenious travaill in castinge downe hils and makyng craggy mountaynes flat with the face of the earthe, or forcing stonie rockes, with places heretofore impassible, to oppen and make waye to their huge armies: but I have in presente intente, to discover unto you the mervellous effects of love; which, excedinge the opynion of common thynges, seames more strauge then the curious construction and frame of any pallais for necessitie or pleasure, threatic, or place of solace, buylded by art or industrie of man, or other stately court, (what sqware, quadrante, or triangle forme, soever, it containes), or other misticall worke, yeldinge cause of wonder to the universitie of the earthe; seing that a mortal grudge, grounded uppon greate spite, confirmed with the continuance of a longe time, and pursued extremelye wythe bloddye persecution and unnaturall crueltie, is not onely converted upon a sodaine into perfecte frendshippe, but also, by an effecte and operation of love, made so indissoluble, that no future accidente, or synister devise of enemies, could once make a breache, and muche lesse utterly dissolve, the league of amity so happely begone and sewerly knite together by the vertue of affection whyche wee call commonlye the passion procured by love. Wherunto is also added a like effecte of a thankefull mynde, arguing unto us (whythe a famyliar example) that as ingratitude is the greatest vice that raynes in this disposition of man, and principall enemy to the honor of nobilitye,

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

I

soo the contrary, deserveth by justice the tytle of the moste precious vertue that is. Wherein, as the Thebans were shamefully reproched for the respect of their greate Capttaines Epaimynondes and Pelopides, so the Plateons (on the contrarye) were worthely renoumed for the large recompence and consideracion they used, to the benefyte of the Greekes who delivered them from the servitude of the Persians. Like as, also, the Sycyoniens weare yet the crown of eternal commendacion for the thankefull returne of the curtesye of Aratus; by whome they were frankely taken oute of the handes of cruell tyrantes. If the acte of Philip Marya, late Duke of Myllan, deserveth detestacion for the unnaturall crueltye he committed upon the person of his wife (who, albeit, was equal in nobilitie, exceded him in the giftes of fortune and large possessions, of indifferente beawtye to contente a reasonable man, nothinge inferior to the beste ladye of the cuntrye in the ornaments of nature and giftes of grace, and yelding him besides suche honor and honest love as was necessary for the state of mariage, yet, notwithstandinge, was he so unthankfull to all these benefites, that, after he had colled the flower of her beawtye, and forced her to passe an assuraunce of her goods and lvyngye to his use, hee committed secret execution, and washed his handes in the blod of th' infortunate ladye, contrarye to all civilytie or lawe of nature), if he, I saye, seame justly meritorious of reproche, we maye worthely imparte treble prayse to a barbarous Turke and admirall of the cuntrye of Arabia, who, beinge overthrowen in the bataile foughten in that cuntrye by Baudwin King of Ierusalem, him-selfe and wife prisoners, with his treasure and municion of warre at the disposition of the sayde Kinge, and beinge dismissed frely without exaction or raunsom, and his wife restored withoute violacion, or force of her bodye, judged it a vertu not to be overcome in magnificence and liberalitye, and a mortal vice to beare the title of an unthankfull Prince. Whereof he made declaracion: for that, not longe after, the sayde Bawdwine beinge beseged of the infidels, and, by distresse of warre, at point to fal into their mercy, the sayde admyral, not unmindefull of the compassion he showed upon his misery, brake into him by nighte, and, withe certeine assistantes of horsemen, prevented his present perill, and set him safelye upon his waye from al offer or feare of daunger. All whiche I have coated in this introduction for that my historye importes ii. examples of semblable substance, the one exposinge a

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE I wonderfull effecte of frendshipp on the behalf of his ennemie, and the other retorninge his liberalitie withe suche ample consideration that there is no degre in any corner of Christendom but may se an experience of vertue in the doings of them both. Wherin I wishe chiefly a perticipacion of the fruite of such examples to all sortes of our countriemen in Englande; to th'ende wee maye forme our lyves upon the verteous presedents of such strangers as, preferinge vertue afore vice, have bene more curious to get a true renoume of reputation, then carefull of a vaine glorious or folyshe pomppe of the world.



N the Recewles or comentories of Tuskan, I find special remembraunce of a mortall grudge betwene ii of the moste noble houses in Syenna, called Salimbino and Montanino: whereof, as bothe the one and other were of semblable reputation for honour and height of estate, so were they of equall rule and authoritie in the government of their publike weale. Whose parentes, allbeit, and predecessours, were of singler commendation, by the vertue of mutuall societye whiche appeared so entyer and indissoluble betwene them by manye discentes, that the writers in that age douted not to tearme them no lesse true myrroers and patterns of perfect frendship than either Horestes or Pylladas, which the Romain oratour makes so famous by peculiar commendation; yet, according to the opinion of Aristotle, as children commonly do rather excede their fathers in vice then resemble them in vertue, so the posteretyes of these noble houses, in place to persever in the vertue of their parentes or treade in the steppes of their aunciente amytye, in the verie entrey of their flourishing time, when al men were in expectacion of verteous frutes like to their fathers, withe hope to confirme the league of their long frendshippe, they embrased sinister occasions of civil mutines, grounding great quarrels upon slender or smal

Children do commonly rather excede their fathers in vice then resemble them in vertue.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

I

substance, with a disposition and equall desyre the one to pursewe the other wyth suche fatal hate and unnaturall tyranny, that as the one was almost brought even to the brinke of utter desolation of hys house and revenue, so the other (triumphing, albeit, in the conquest of his enemye) escaped not only without perentory perill of himselfe, and losse of a number of his deare kinsmen and companions of race, but also was enjoyned to so harde a penance that he lyved alwayes after in the continuall grudge and desdaine of the people: the viewe of whose malice, preferring a wonderful remorse of conscience, with remembrance of the fowlnes of the facte passed, pursewed hym with alarams of unnaturall and frettinge disquiet of minde, even untill the last separation of his soule and body. And here, if you conferre the quarrell with the cause, and waighe in indiffrent ballance the mischives, morders, with infinit inconveniences, derived of so small occasions, you nede not doubt to joyne in opinion with Paulus Iovius, and other writers worthy of no lesse credyte then of greate fame for learning and skil; who, amongst other generall descriptions of Italy, giveth her this peculiar commendacion, that, beyng subject to th'influence of a crabbed clymate and quarrelus constellation, termes her to be (of al the world) the only storehouse for percialites and civill faccions, and market place of tumultes and suborned troubles: which I colde also justefie by th'autority of the warres betwene the Florentines and the Syennoys, with other free states in the countreye; besids the civill discencions among the nobility, with unnaturall persecutions of families and kindreds; saving that the discourse wolde seame more tedious then necessarye, and keep me to longe from the principal points of my history, which calles me now to perform my promise, and satisfye the expectation of the rearder. No man douteth (I am sewer) that, as wel antiquity as people of present being, have not had in general regard and peculiar delyte the noble exercise of hunting divers kynds of chases; no lesse for the respect of pleasure, then evitacion of divers discomodities, happening oftentymes to the husbandmen by the wilde boare and wolfe, with other beasts of equall fercenes and like annoy. Wherin, albeit, besides the con-

Italy, a store house for mutinies.

Th' exercise of hunting is both pleasant and profitable.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE I
The proffit in hunting.

tentment of the mynde, ther is to be cooled a necessary fruite of double commoditie; the one to sturre up the ydle crewe of delicate persons haunting the houses of great men to the exercise and ymitation of honest traveill; the other, representyng the very sleightes and pollecies in warre, instructes the young gentlemen, not hable as yet to endure the hardnes and experience of the fyelde, to discern the advantage of the place, the subtely in dressing his ambushe for beyng discovered, his tyme to dysplaie the same to the disadvantage of the enemy, the order how and when to geve the charge, with an enforcyng of corage to persewe the chasse so farre as good government will give leave. Yet is not thys pleasaunt skirmishe and necessary recreation for youth wythout some argument of greate, and almoste absolute assurance of diverse sortes of misfortunes: for wee reade that Meleager loste his lyfe in killing the wilde boare of Calidona: Cephale for the lyke respect kylled his deare frende Procris: the notable philosopher, Acast, having th' only credite for education of the heir apparaunt of his prince, and honouring albeit the childe with more then an ordinarye affection, yet hunting on a tyme among the deserts of that countreye, contrary to the wil of the King (for that he was warned by a prophecy of the death and distruction of his soune in castyng darte at the boare), slewe hym whom hee loved as muche or more then himselfe. Besides, for a familiar profe of my allegation in this case, yt is not yet viij yeres since the Countie Palatine, one of the chiefe princes of Germany, being lost of hys companye in pursewing the chasse of a fierce boare, was overthrowen, horse and man, and in daunger to be devoured by the furye of the beaste, if, by good chaunce, hys ryder with ij freshe dogges had not ben at hand to prevent his perill. So, likewise, by the hunting of a wilde boare, grewe the bloody quarel betwne theses ij houses. For, having one day, by force and polyeie of men and dogges, kylled one of the greatest boares about Syenna; in the particular commendacion which every man gave to the doughtines of his dogge, there began to kinde a kinde of mislike in the hartes of the twoo younge lordes, whiche—with the heate of the wine wherein they

The daunger of a prince in Iermanye in hunting.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

I

goolled without regarde after their travaill, and the bloude being chaffed with the presse and number of termes of reproche—bolked out at laste to cruell blowes ; which (without respect of personnes) seamed so to occupye the place for the tyme, that besides a nomber that were hurte on bothe partes, the Salimbins hadde the worste, for that one of theyr chiefe was lefte for dead in the fielde. Wherewith, the fraye discontinued for that time, and every man retired ; the Montanins, not gladd of the victorie, for that theye doubted a revenge ; and the Salimbins, contented by force with theyr present fortune ; attendynge, notwithstandinge, th' assistance of a better tyme, to redeme the bloude of theyr kinsman, not with equall losse of their enemy, but with utter ruine and subversion of the whole house of their adverse parte. Whiche they fayled not accordingly to performe with suche hoate expedicion and power, that, after diverse publike skermishes and private combats, with indecent murders, (the contrary parte having consumed the moste parte of their rente and renewe in meintainynge garrisons to withstande theyr malyce within the compasse of no longe tyme) they hadd brought to extreme depopulation the whole kindred of the Montanins, excepte one younge gentleman named Charles, who, findynge himselfe to weake to resyste any longer the rage of his adversaries, retired to a contentement by force and gave place to their furie : and they, also, fyndynge the fielde abandorned without any to make head against them, dismissed their angrye humor and layde asyde their bluddyc weapons, beinge dolled with the heavye and mortall blowes upon theyr conquered enemies. This Charles and laste remainder of the house of Montanino, being appointed by destenie to lyve yet in spite of his enemies, stirred not out of the towne of Sienna ; where, as a solitary man in the presse of his adversaries, he lived without eyther salutynge or hauntyng the place of theyr repaire ; being favored, notwithstandinge, of the moste parte of the cytie, for that, after so many broyles and horley borleys of warre—which, with the fiske, had converted the greatest parte of his porcion and inheritaunce into nothyng—he lyved, notwithstandinge, of that lytle whiche fortune had lefte him, in

A courte of peynall forfeitures, or condemnation for money.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE honest sorte ; meintainyng a traine accordyng to the state
I and condicion of his lyvyng ; having in the house with hym,
the companye of his syster, whiche the gods seamed to
reserve, not onelye for his speciall consolacion in so greate a
calamitie, but also, in restoryng theyr house to hys auncient
entier and beinge, to buylde agayne a newe and perfecte
frendshipp uppon the fyrste fondacion, and confirme eftesones
by her vertue a perpetuities of indissoluble amitie betwene
her brother and the house of his extreame adversary. Her
name was Angeliqua ; whose speciall ornaments by nature,
and peculiar gyftes of God, chalenged, not onelye an equalitye,
but a degre above, the beste and greatest dames of the
countreie. So scamed she justlye meritorious of that name,
without doinge wronge to anye ; because her wisdome,
womanlye behaviour, with humble curtesye, made suche
declaracion of her honestye and vertue, that they whiche
hated theyr house, and detested the remembraunce of their
race, could not close their mouthes from her due commen-
dacion, nor forbear to wishe that theyr daughters and
children were of semblable disposition. Suche is the opera-
cion and force of true vertue in the hartes of suche as em-
brace her with unfayned sinceritie ; exposinge, in lyke sorte,
suche frutes as seame wondrous in the eye of worlde and
excede the common imaginacion of men, by reducinge the
confusion of kindreds into an entier of everlastyng amytye,
and of a mortall enemy to make a moste assured frende.
Whereof, they that doubte of the goodnes of so greate a
gyfte, maye be satisfyed by the present proffe of this
Angeliqua ; who so fedd the cares of the cytie with the
generall brute and commendacion of her vertue, that, in
one moment, he, which earst was chiefe and captaine of the
warre against them, and seamed invincible against all the
ayde and assistaunce they could procure, is nowe become a
slave, and most subject to the viewe and contemplation of her
beautie ; in suche sorte as, by litle and litle, he grew into
termes of extreme affection and undowted zeale towards her,
whose name he hated, earst, no lesse then the cankered
styng of the cruell cockatrice. Wherin, as the humor of
his love scamed to excede the ordinarie impressions of men

The frutes
which true
vertue ex-
poseth.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

in that case, so he neyther was hable to resiste the hoate sommaunce of his newe appetit, nor kepe warre any tyme with the suggestion of his sodayne desire ; but, as one that felt himselfe stricken with the thonderbolt of his destynie, gave place to his sentence, and entred into devise with himselfe what waye too use, to wynne the encounter of his fancie. The remembraunce of the late wronge he had done them seamed a great impediment to his purpose : neyther had he the meane to demaunde her in mariage whose teares were skarce drye in bewailyng the desolation he hadd so lately thondred upon al their house, the simple view and recorde wherof, preferred just cause of dispaire to obtaine the good will of her brother. Wherwith, feling a daily increase of his passion, with continuall diminution and unlikelyhod of meanes to releve his torment, (specialy for that he had imprisoned his liberty, where no raunsome could serve to redeme it ; and that love had bounde hym to so harde a pennaunce, that the only pleasure he had in life was to thinke upon her whome dispaire denied him to reclaime by any meanes) he began to curse thee first cause of the quarell, and wyshe the huntyng of the boare hadd never ben toller-able in Italy ; inveighyng withall agaynste the malice of hys fortune that seamed to be his guide in the pursuete of so great persecution, and now, in the hope and expectation of reste and repose from toyle, to committ hym to the mercy of a martirdome more intollerable then the torment of the whele, and of lesse hope to be delivered then the damned soules out of th'everlasting flame in hell. Wherin also his chieffeste greffe and grudge of minde semed to stande upon double termes ; both for that he durst neyther discover his disease to any his owne frendes, whom he knewe would rather mislike his request then be moved to compassion upon hys case or studye to releve his distresse, nor promise himselfe any liklihod (and much lesse assurance) ever to cooll eyther flower or fruite of his affection to Angeliqua ; for that he thought she had no reason to remorse upon him in whose face appeared yet the fresh remembrance of the late revenge and destruction of her kynsmenne.

But what? Who doughteth of the tickle disposition of

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE I fortune; or is not perswaded that the doings of men are as subject to chaung and alteration as the elament to mutability and diversetie of complexions, at such time as the greate Iupiter, somoning the winds, and violence of other weather, to quarell with the calme and quiet skye, celypsyng the naturall clerenes of the son by converting him into sondry sortes of darke and dim colloures? Or what constancye or assurance is to be reapposed in our worldly affaires, seyng the veray thoughtes and imaginations of men are disposed and governed by the revolucion and course of tymes? Wherin the philosopher is of opinion that no degre is dispensed from the clymat of the constellation. 'For,' saith he, 'the favors and displeasures of princes are neither so mortal nor of such continuance, but being incident to conversion, we see in one momente an assured conjunction of frendship with him who earst pursewed our subvercion with mortall hate. And truly he that weigheth the comutation of thinges with indifferent judgment may justly note him of gret simplicity, that resolves perpetuity or continual stay or abode, in any thing that is either accidental or proper to man.' Wherin as I am sufficiently justefyed by auncient records and foraine authorities, so he that with diligence will coate the Chronicles of England and Fraunce within theis C yeares, shall fynde choyse of examples to cleare his doubt, and confirme him in the contrary opinion: which, bycause it importes such consequence, and rather excedes then seams conveniente for the compasse of my present intent, I leave them to the construction of the diligent reader, who, syfting nerey the monumentes of that time, may find thee more alteracion and change of estates in bothe those realmes within lesse then so many yeres then in the space of ii C yeares afore. For he may see thear of credible reaport, that he that governed as king, sittinge in the seate royall of the realme, making the whole multitude tremble at the voyce of his commaundimente, was sodainly deposed and skarcely eskaped the infamie of a cruell and slaumdrous death; and, on the other part, the other that attended only the fatal destruction of himselfe and famuly, is not only restored to the scepture of the kingdom, but also

All things are
subject to
change.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

in a moment sytts in the judgemente seate upon vengauce and correction of theym which had geven sentence and awarded the writ of execution against himself. Calyr, one of the iiii great Bassyas of the greate Turke, had no lesse awe and authoritie over the whole Mahometian empire then undowted credit with the emperour and mighty monarche himself; who wold never consulte of any enterprise without the councell of this captaine, nor perform any expedition without his company; and yet, upon a suddaine, and without any cause (saving the malicious appetite of his maister), he was cruelly stranged in presence, and by commaundment of him whom he had so faithfully honoured and served. On the contrarye syde, the valiante Argon Tartare, after he was entred into armes agaynst his uncle Tangodor Cany, being taken and adjudged to passe by the rigor of tormentes, and after receive the due hier of unnatural conspiracy, as he was sent into Armenya to be executed, being at the point to commit himself to the mercy of the tormentors, and paste al hope or expectation of aid, was sodainly reskewed by certain Tartarians of the garrison and household servants to his late father deceased, and restored after to the dominion and kingdom of Tartaria, in the yere of our lord a thousaund-two-hondreth-fouer-skore-and-five. Th' example of th' empresse Adalede makes no lesse profe herin then the former recordes; for, being unhappely fallen into the handes of the tyrante Beranger, the usurper at that tyme of th' empire, after she had longe tried the curtesye of this miserable and wretched disposicion, beinge at the verye brinke and place of execution, where was no likelihode nor imagination of ayd, had th' assistance of a good fortune; for, avoidyng his cruell sentence, by a secrete and suddaine flighte at the same instaunte, was married after to Otton, the firste of that name; and lived till shee sawe the juste revenge of her wronge upon the same usurper and his race, by Otton her sonne succeedinge his father in the monarkye. All which, of no lesse authoritie then undoubted credit, I have preferred as assured paterns of the mobilitie and uncertein stay of the state of the affaires of this world. Wherin, also, when th' occasion dothe offer, you maye note a verefication, or lyke

DISCOURSE

I

Deathe the
due hyer of
unnaturall
conspiracy.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE

I

accident, in the sequell of this Montanyno; who, after the depopulation of his house by civill warre, and the moste parte of his porcion wasted in the supplye of that quarell, fell into a misery more tragicall then the other, and of lesse hope of ayde or delyverye; and yet, beinge passed th' extreme sommonce of his fortune, and attendynge the fatall and last momente of execution, after he had dismissed all expectation of succoure, his deliveraunce appeared by hym that procured and pursewed his distresse. And the same miserye that firste moved his ruine, reserved suche a vertue in the ende of his tragedye, that, by th' only assistance of him whom he thoughte to have sworne his destruction, he was restored with more assurance and contentement of minde then afore.

But nowe to our amarus Salimbino, who, tossed in the stormye sea of his unquiet thoughtes, was no lesse passioned on the behalfe of Angeliqua then she moste carefull to comforte the calamitic of her brother, with indever to lyve together in mutuall tranquillitye, accordynge to the somonce of nature and decree of lawe of kynde; neyther respectynge the tormente of her ennemye whiche shee knew not, nor regarding to pranke up herselfe to please th'appetite of any other. And, albeit, it was his chaunce sometime to accoaste her in the strete, or other place, where he forgat not to give her the *Bachilomano*, with al shew and argumente of humble duty; and she, in like sorte, retorned his Italian salutation wyth semelye and not semblable curtesye; yet sawe he no meanes to remove the dispaire of her good will, nor she hable to discerne the cause of his new and suddaine greting. But, as he suffred himselfe at the first to be subject to the somonce of love, and gave him previledg without resistance to builde his bower in the bottome of his hart; so, being now to weake to supplant him who hath conquered and made himselfe lord over al the ports in him, he is bounde to beare the yoke of continuall passioun, without licence or liberty to be dispensed from the least assaulte and alaram which that hellishe tormentor ministreth to suche as marche under the enseigne of his awe: neyther hath he other consolation in his present distresse but such as is appointed to fede the desolate mynds

A kinde of
curtesye or
amarus gret-
ing in Italye.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

of desperat lovers; moderating in some part the force of their affliction with imagination that the benefyte of time wil, at laste, eyther putte the praye of their desyre into their handes, or els geve ende to their disquiette by som suborned abridgmet of their naturall daies. Wherin, as he languished with no lesse perplexitie of minde then happeneth to suche as by fate are forced to passe throwe the miserye of suche doleful traunces, so, as he attended in this sorte the gift of a better occasion, beholde! th'approch of the second desaster or tragedye of the unhappye Montanino.

DISCOURSE

1

Hope is a
chiefe com-
forte in
affliction.

For within the cytye of Syenna dwelte a longe nosed marchaunte; who, for the moste part, as they be more gredy to gette then worthie of that which they have, so do they seldom or never respect the meane so they may senger that which they wish. He had joyning to the uttermoste suburbes of the cytye a faire house, environed with large demaines, whereuppon confyned, on al partes, certaine peces of grounde of the saide Montanyno; which, with a bare house in the towne, as it was al that the malice of his fortune had left hym of the ample patrymonye of his parentes, so this hungrye burgeys, thinkinge it no offence or grudge of conscience to enlarge his lyvinge withe the porcion of his neighbour (knowinge well enoughe that after so many occasions of greate expenses, he was not onely in distresse for monye, but wanted other necessary furniture) sent his broaker to boarde him for the sale of his lands in the contrey, with commission to geve hym a thousande duckats for those groundes which joyned to his lordshippe without the subberbes. Wherin his request was frustrate, and he out of hope that waye to wyn th'effect of his desyer, for that Charles was resolved to make store of those groundes above the rest of the lytle that was left him; cheffy for that besydes they were percell of th'auncient possessions of his parents; yet he reserved a spicial zeale to those landes, because the viewe of them restored a freshe remembrance of suche as in maney ages before had borne the greatest swaighe in that publike weale. Wherwyth the covetus villayne, not contente with the reasonable deniall of the gentleman, did not imediatlye dismisse his desier to get

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE that which he ought not to have wished, but determined
I not only to win it by unorderly meanes, but also for reveng
of the plain answer of the Montanyne entred into devise to
subborne some meanes to have it at a lesse price, and not
without the hazarde and perill of the lif of that pore gentil-
man; followinge therein the detestable example of th'injuste
Iesabell, who procured the death of Naboothe, to th'ende
she mighte enjoye his possession. Wherin he was furthered
everye waye, but chiefly with th'assistance of the tyme. For
at the same instaunte, by reason of the mutuall quarels and
civil dyscentions that raigned longe before in the moste
partes of Italye, moste of the nobilitie were driven the
countrie; and those few that remayned, lyved not only
under the awe of town clarks and catchepowles, chosen by
the rurall crew, but also had small assurance of savetye in
their townes or cities: where, for the more subjection and
awe of the gentlemen, this villanous sect of cursed cater-
pillers made a lawe not muche unlike the tyrannous statute
which the Athenians hadde in the time of Solon, that no
man, of what degree or condicion soever hee were, shoulde,
neither by himselfe, nor procurement of any other, go aboute
to purchasse the reappeale or restitution of any that were
banished their countreye, upon payne to yelde to the fyske a
thousande florentes; with addicion, that if he were not hable
to aunswere the condemnacion within ten days, to loase his
head in remembrance of the forfeyte. Who markes well the
mistrye of this lawe, maye easely judge the viperus mean-
inge of those wretches, who rather resemble the barbarous
tirants and infidels without faith then seame to have the
hartes of true Christians. And happye is hee that is not
borne under the governemente of suche a state; where they
doo not onely shutte the gates of compassion against their
innocente neighbours and frends, habandoned their countrey
for peculiar grudges one against another, but also punished,
by an unnaturall crueltye, the vertue of suche as seke to
supply the affliction of theym that oughte to be of equall
regarde and honor to the best of them. And, besides that
this oppressour of innocents was bothe one of the lawe
makers and chiefe minister and commaunder of the same,

An ungodlie
lawe.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

yet was he sewer of a seconde assistaunce, which seamed no lesse available to him then the advantage of his power or authoritie. Wherefore, dispencinge withe no time in the execution of his develishe devise, he somoned Don Charles by write to appeare before the Senat, where was layde afore hym the breache of the sayde lawe. And for a more profe or plaine of the matter, th'accusation was no soner published then he hadde at his elbowe double choise of perjured witnesses; who, what by the awe of his authoritie, and th'infecting somonce of certeine peces of golde wherwith he had fyled their tonges afore, advouched th'appeale by othe; deposing further, that they knewe where he hadde solicited to redeme diverse of his banished frends, seking to supplant the state of the city by restoring the nobles and gentlemen to their auncient rule and authoritie. Whiche made the pore Montanyn in suche double amaze of doubt and feare, that he was not only voyde of counsel for the present, but in dispaire to defende his right againste the malice of the whole state; chiefly for that the procurer of the fyske, smellynge th'approche of so greate a gaine, awarded authorities to arrest his body to prison, and pursued his processe with suche expedicion, that, within vi dayes, he was condemned upon the statute of rappeale, and to paye the forfait within ix dayes after, or els to leave his head in pawne of the payment. The lawe imported suche rigour that there was no place for mediacion or sute of entreatye, and the eares of the justice were closed against the complainte of innocents; neither durst any man inveighe on his behalfe, for feare of hym that was th'author of th'act. And the ayde of kynsmen is as colde in that countrey as in other places. And frendes nowe a dayes resemble the raven or hungry kyte, who never flyeth but towards the place where they hope to fynde some thinge to praye upon; so the frendes of our age be fled so far from the vertue of true frendshipp, that they will not onlye refuse to releve hym whome God and nature hath bounde them to susteine, but also make no conscience to disclaime the name of a kinsman to the nearest allye they have; and that without any cause, onlesse you will impute it to the want of equall welthe. Wherein mine owne experience moveth me

DISCOURSE

I

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE I to make a challenge to some in England; if my power were as indifferent to pleade with hym, as I have juste reason to put hym in remembraunce of his fault. Albeit that quarels is tollerable which marcheth under the flagge of innocency and truth; and juste objections wil make the guilty blushe.

But nowe to the sorowful Montanyn, who, complayninge the points of his desaster in a darke prison, where was no kynd of consolation, nor yet the offer of any eecho to resounde his dolorous cryes, was saluted the nexte daye with a cople of his sentence diffinitive, wherein he was taxed to the some of a M florents or losse of lyfe within ix dayes. Here he founde what it is to have an evill neyghbour, and how greatly they do thurst that desiere to drinke of any other mans cupp, but chiefly the insatiabable longyng of suche as are with child for another mans lvyng. And, albeit his conscience was without grudge for any offence or breache of the lawe, yet his grief seamed of harde tolleracion, because the cursed trayson of a cankard clowne should triumphe over hym so farre, that, to quenche the glot of his covetous rage, he shoulde be forced to disinherite himselfe, and leave without succour his dear syster: who, for her part, was so dolorous on the behalfe of this newe desaster fallen upon her brother that she sturred not out of her chamber, nor once suffered her eyes to bee drye from teares since the firste newes of that sorowfull accident; whiche she complayned with more vehemency because she sawe a present approche of perentory destruction to the litle remeinder of the whole house. 'Alas,' saith she, 'is the crueltye of fortune of suche rigorous condicion, or her malice of suche perpetuitye, that she will graunte no dispense, nor admit any oblacion or offer to purchasse her favor? Or is ther no sacrifice to satisfye the angry disposition of the heavens, who ceasse not to thonder whole millions of mishappes upon this desolate and wretched house of ours, with continuance of their angrye regards, even untill th' utter dissolution of the same? Howe much better had it ben for us fewe as remaine of the decayed stocke and withered generacion of Montanyno, to have passed, amongst the rest of our companions, by the edge of

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

I

the sworde of the enemye, then, in lyvyng, to be miserable partakers of the unjste malice of such as are not onely common enemies to innocency, but, bearynge a naturall grudge to the veray remembraunce and name of nobility, do hunt with open mouth (as the ravenyng wolfe) to devour the discents of noble kynd! How can this beare the name of a free cytie, or justly merite the tytle of a state not incident to servile lawe; where the governement passeth under the conveyghe of a confused multitude, whome nature hath ordeined to drawe the yoke of other mens awe, and lawe of kynde (in their nativitie) framed to be subject to suche as their rurall force constraines to stoope to the sentence of their dome? Ah! brother,' saith she, with a freshe supplye of sorowfull teares, 'howe rightely can I conster the cause of thy presente trouble and indifferent undoing of us both? The example of thy wronge argues sufficiently the detestable disposition of our cursed Senatours, who seam more gredye to hunte the chasse of unlawfull and fylthye gaine, then carefull to kepe their conscience without spott or grudge of manifest oppression and wronge. For yf the desyre of thy litle livyng in the countrey, and glisteringe shewe of thy greate house in the open gaze and eye of the whole worlde passing by the streetes, had not sturred up the covetous humour of that ravenouse marchaunte, thou hadst lyved free from care, and thy estate farre from anye question in the Senate House; neyther woulde anye man have charged thee with imputacion of a thing, which I wold to God thou hadst not onely undertaken, but also broughte in effecte; to the ende thou mightest have bene the author, and I the witnes, of the juste revenge of this villanous crew, whose naturall malice, more then eyther reason or justice, doth clogge the with this harde imposition of manifest wronge. There is no reason that a peltyng marchaunt, never norrished in anye skole of cyvill or curteous education, other then in a shoppe amongst prentises and companions of his owne calibre, or the son of hym that is a slave and servile borne by kynde, shoulde eyther beare office in a common-welthe, and muche lesse sytte in judgement of theym whose harts by nature abhorres to be tryed by the

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE barbarous voice of so vile and base people. Oh! how
I happy be theis states and countreys, where kynges gyve
lawes, and princes use respect of favor to suche as resemble
them in condicion and vertue: neither hath he greate
cause to grudge with his dome, that hath his cause debated
in the presence of his prince, and his sentence published by
suche as bee of equall honor and reputatyion: where wee,
alas! maye justlye exclaime againste oure cursed constella-
cion, that hath broughte us forthe in so unhappie a tyme,
and made us, not onely incident, but subject and slaves to a
councell more perverst and partial then corrupcion itselfe!
I woulde oure predecessours, or some good fortune of for-
reine tyme, by reducyng this countrey into a monarke, had
established a seat royall of a kynge, wythe authoritye that
only his seede and succession shoulde governe the whole,
rather then by leaving it thus dispersed into diverse con-
fused liberties, to make us a mutuall praye one to another.
For have we not the Frenchemen at oure backes, and the
army of the greate Vicare of Rome on the one side, with
the subtil Florentins ready to invade us on the other side,
in suche sorte as who so is hongry maye boldly praye uppon
us without resistaunce. And yet, for a more increase of our
wrechednes, wee mainteine warre with ourselves; and the
beste parte are subdued and made thrall to suche as are not
worthy anye waye to be vallet to the worste of us that feles
our selves greved with suche affliction. But what can
satisfy the covetousnes of man, or what benefit can stay
hym that is given to perfidie or falsehod; and to what
ende, alas! serve my teares or tunes of dolorous exclama-
cion, if not in recording the circumstaunce of oure mutual
grief, to restore a freshe remembraunce of thy pecuniar
desaster? Oh deare brother! whose destinies, I see, will
not dismisse the rigor of their dome, till they have brought
us both to the brinke of extreme subvereion. Albeit, yf the
offer of my bodye in sacrifice, or other mortall execution,
wolde serve to redeme thy libertye, and preserve thy pos-
session in entier, assure thy selfe that thy pore Angeliqua
wold be no lesse readye to make exchange of her life, for
the ransom of thy contentement and quiet, then theis

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

wyde-mowthd rokes do seke and gape to devoure thy honour and living.' DISCOURSE
I

And as the dolorous lady was thus in torments of dule, with more passion on the behalfe of her brother then care any waie for herself, the pore Montanine, standing betwen a hard sentence and a most unhappie fortune, considered the laste day of fatall respit to draw faste to his date. And having no choice of meanes to moderat the rigour of the law, but by satisfying the whole demaunde of the fiske, which also he was not hable to levye by any credit or assistaunce of his frendes, reposed his laste assuraunce and refuge of deliverye in the sale of his lande. And as the taste of life is pleasaunte to all men, and eche degree by nature is carefull to prolonge it to the laste hower, so, accordynge to the extreme condicion of his present case, he resolved to employe the pryce of his lyvinge in the raansom of his presente trouble. Wheruppon he despatched immediatlye one of the sergeantes, or officers of the gail, to the corrupt money-maister that was firste and all the cause of his undeserved mischief, with commission to conclude the bargaine for a thousand duckats, accordynge to the rate of his firste offer. But the traiterous wretch and pernicious patterne of iniquitie, knowinge the extreme pointes of the pore prisonner, who stode nowe in water up to the chyn, with more likelihode to sinke then assuraunce to recover the fyrme lande, thoughte that his deathe woulde deliver him free possession of his lyvinge, without th'assistaunce of money: wherefore, triumphyng alredy in the glorye of so great a fortune, with expectation to have the lande by speciall awarde of the fiske and Senat, retorned the messenger with aunswere, that, albeit of late he had desier to enlarge his demayne in the subberbe with a pece of his possession adjoynyng, yet, upon a further viewe and consideration of the grounde, he was nowe of minde that his price far exceeded the valewe, neither coude he make so presente a proffit upon so small a plat of inherit-
aunce, as with the use and interest of so greate a summe of money as a M ducats. Notwithstanding, for a supply of his present nede, he was contented to give him vii C florents,

The taste of
life pleasante
to all men.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE I and that more for the relief of his distresse then any respecte of commoditie by the bargain. Here maye be noted the vertue and operacion of the covetous mynde, infected with the desyer of fylthie gaine, whose frutes are to thurste after other men's goods, and glory in the dekaye of their neighbour, with a dispositioun to converte the ungracious spoyles of their brethren into a pleasaunt pray to their ravening appetite, without regarde notwithstanding to th' express inhibition of God, in diverse place of the Scripture, or respecte to the dutie of his conscience, or burthen of his soule. Wherin, besides the peynall threatens of our Saviour in the worlde to come, he seames also to hycr a tormentor to molest his quiet during his abode here: for the more he is in devise to encrease his welth, the faster decreaseth his quiet, and himselfe so subject to declinacion, according to the wordes of the Apostle, that a covetous man taketh more revenge of himselfe beinge on lyve, then his enemy when he is deade; neyther doth he consume the daye in other devises then in accumulacion of threasor, nor yeldes charitie to any but his golden coffers, whome he will not deffraye, nor once deminishe, of a simple denier, if it were to redeme the lyfe of hys naturall father. You have hard his former offer of a thousand ducats, with no lesse desier to have it at that price; and now you see he doth not only refuse it, but in a mockerie makes a disdainfull tender of vii C florents, attending a further benefyt by the death of the unfortunate Montanin; who, no lesse astonyed at the reoport of this resolucion and refusall not loked for, then when the judge published the sentence of his condemnacion, began to dispaire of other refuge; chiefly for that the awe and respect of authoritie of that villaine prevailed so much over the rest of the marchauntes and cytizens thear, that none other durste undertake the bargaine, seinge their maister usurer made difficultie to advaunce the value. Such wer the dispites of his fortune, and extreme termes which sinister fate, with the malice of the wicked, had brought him unto. Wherin, dismissing th' expectation of all succours, gave sentence of his owne life, and committed th' execution to the rigour of the lawe; resolving rather to quench th' insatiable thirst or

The covetous minde is never in quiet, according to the wordes of th' appostle.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

gredeye appetit of his covetous enemy by th' oblation of his innocent life into th' andes of such unrighteous judges, then, in exchaunging the remainder of his whole inheritance for so smal a tribute (insufficient, also, to satisfie the demaund of the fiske), to leave his sister in extreme penurie, without al meanes of necessarie sustentacion. Wherefore, reposing much for himself in th' innocencye of his cause at the handes of the highe judge (chiefly for that the natural course of his dayes stode at point to be abridged by the wickednes of other men) after hee had preferred certein vehement invectives against the general malice of the worlde, with special exclamacion on the behalfe of his peculiar myshap, he desyred respite to examine his life in secret, and dispose for the health of his soule. Which resolution of death was furthwith imparted to the faire Angeliqua; who, besides whole rivers of teares distilling from her watery eyes with dollorous cryes in dolefull voyce, redoubled with an eccho of treble dule, entred into a mortall war wythe her garmentes and attyre of her head, neither forbearing to deschevel her crispy lockes and heare exceding the collar of amber, nor commit cruel execution upon the tender partes of her body. And giving free skope to the humor of her fury, she spared not to imprint with her nayles, uppon the precious complexion of her oriente face, a pityfull remembrance of the tragicall troble of her desolate brother, whome shee coulde not in any way perswade to a chaung or alteracion of purpose, although she employed herselfe and councill of her frendes to th' uttermoste. But I dare avouch thus muche on the behalf of the deare zeale shee beare hym, that, yf by the force and malice of the distresse he had gyven place to nature and dyed, she had not lyved to have revenged his wronge, nor lamented her owne desolacion. For the same affection whiche moved her to suche care of his life, woulde also have procured her to have bene his companion to the grave; whereby one tombe, at one instaunte, shold have served to shroode the ii bodies and last remaynder of the whole race and house of the Montanyns. And that which seamed to restore her dollorous passion with a freshe supply and increase of newe sorowe, was the heavie newes of diverse of her

DISCOURSE

I

God the
highe judge.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE I neare kynsmen touching the speedy approach of the extreme date and delay of the sentence diffinitive; which, as they had not onli indeavored to differ yet som longer time, but also to purchase a moderation of the rigour; so, beyng no lesse frustrate in the one, then voyed of assuraunce or hope of the other, they sayed there rested nothing on their powers to performe or discharge the office of true frends on her behalf, saving to perswade her to consolacion, and to use patience in cases of adversitie, chiefly wher there appears absolute dispaire of all remedie, and the sinister suggestion of malicious fortune hath suppressed al hope and expectation of delivery. Wherin, as an unfained witnes of their presente dollour they let fall certaine teares to accompanie the pitifull dule of her who, upon the reaport of theis last accurrauntes, forgat not to fyll the aire ful of hollowe sighes, with open exclamacion against the lawe of nature, that seamed so careles of her creatures as not only to leave them without armour or sufficient resistance against the ordinary assaultes of the world, but also to make them subject, by speciall destenie, to the sentence and dome of a most unrighteous and hard fortune. But albeit adversity (besides that she is subject to sondry sortes of calamitie) is also 'so quarellous of her one disposition, that, for the respect of one simple or peculiar wronge, she makes us to exclaine generally against all liberties and lawes of God and man; yet ought we so to checke that same humour of inordinat rage that mortifieth within us all regarde of dutie and reason, that we dispaire not in the goodnes of him, who, beyng the giver of all comfort and God of consolation, is more ready to dispose it on our behalfe, then we hable to deserve the gift of so greate a benefit'; and who, in the middes of the teares of this desolate ladye, beyng with the reste of her frends wholly resolved to endure the rigorous sentence of their fate, presented the catastrophe of the tragedy, with such an offer or meane of spedye delivery of the prisoner, that it did not only excede th' expectation of all men, but seamed also the worke of suche a wonderfull misterie, that no man was hable to imagin the devise, afore their eyes gave judgment of th' effecte. For the same day, aboute the nyynth or tenth

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

hower of the evenyng, Anseamno Salymbyno, whome heretofore you have hearde to bee sore passioned with the love of Angelyqua, having spent certain dayes of recreation in the cuntry, is now returned to Syenna; where, passyng by the gate of his ladye, he chaunced to heare a lamentable noyse of women bewailyng the misery of the Montanynes. Wherewith, pursewyng the brute with a more diligente eare, spyed at last, comyng out of the pallayes of Angelyqua, certain olde dames his nexte neighboures, all to bee spent and died with the dew of sorowfull teares, as though they hadd then come from the funeral of some of their frndes. Of whom he enquired the cause of suche unacustumable dule, and whether and what new misfortune were happened of late to the house of the Montanyns. And being at larg resolved of that which you have hard by speciall reporte, went immediatlye to his chamber, where he began to discourse diversely of this suddaine chaunce; sometye determining the deliverie of Charles for the only respect of his syster, whose good wil he thought he cold not purchase any waye so well as by the benefyt and pryce of so greate a frendshyppe; by and by hee accomped the death of her brother a moste necessarye meane to make him the maister of his desire over his sister. Wherin, after he had spent sometye in secrete cogitacion, without any certeyne resolution notwithstanding what to do, he seamed to aske open counsel of himselfe in this sorte: 'What cause have I hereafter to dowte of the thing I chiefly desyer, seyng fortune seames to take more care of my contentement then I am hable to wishe or imagyn; undertaking (as it seames) to presente me wyth th' effecte of my busynes, whenne I leaste thoughte of any hope or liklihod of good successe? For by the death of the Montanyn, who is to be executed to morowe in publike as a rebell or heynous offender of the state, I shal not only see the laste revenge of the most mortall enemyes of our house, but also live without feare hercafter to be molested by any that shal discend of hym: and, on the other syde, his death takes away al impedimentes offering either to stay or hinder me from enjoying of her whom I love so dearely. For her brother being deade and his goodes and

DISCOURSE

I

Salymbyno
debateth with
himself touch-
ing the de-
liverye of his
ennemie.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE I living confiscat to the state, what stay or support hath she, if not in her beauty, and love of some honest gentleman; who, takyng compasion of the losse of so rare an ornament and worke of nature, may entertaine her for his pleasure, untill the glasse of so brikle a gyfte decay with his delyte in her companye, and then, for the respecte of pytye, to bestow her in mariage with some compotent porcion? But what Salymbyno? Shal the offer of any unseamely reveng prevaile above that respect and duty thou art borne to beare and owe unto true vertue? Or wilt thou so much abuse the former glory of thy auncestors and presente renowne of thyselve with an acte, no lesse detestable afore God, then hatefull to the cares of all degrees of honestye? And wilt thou thus deceave th' expectation of thy frendes, and leave them in continual reproche to the posteritye of all ages, with a note of suche infamye that tyme herselfe can skarce race out of the remembrance of man? If all theis lacke authoritic to diswade the, let only the respect and awe of vertue with remorse of conscience, kepe the frome committing so hainous an offence. For to what other end have the auncients put a difference betwene the gentlemen and creatures of baser condition, but that, in exposyng fruites of cyvill courtesye, wee should also stryve to make ourselves noble, and exceede them in th' imitation of true vertue? And as it is far from the office of a noble hart to thunder reveng upon such as are not hable to resyst thy power, so there can be no greater argument or proffie of true magnanymyic then, in buryenge the desyer of vengeaunce in a tombe of eternall oblivion, to expose moste fruites of compassion, where there appeares greate cause to extende the uttermost of rigour, and where on th' adverse partie, is leaste exspecte or hope of succoure. For how came a man lay a more sewer foundation of perpetuall glorye, then in correctinge the humoure of hys fowle appetite and conquerynge the unbridled affections of the wilful mind, to make them bound unto the by thy benefyts, who wer in despaire to receive any pleasure at thy hands? The whiche declaration of true vertue, lyke as it happeneth so seldom amongst men now a dayes, that we may veraye well terme it a thinge excedinge

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

the common course and order of nature; so he that wyll challenge the title of true nobilitie, and seame to excel the rest in th' appeale of perfect honor, muste prefer in publike suche absolute effects of hys worthynes and vertue, as the same may justlye appeare meritorious of an immortal memory in the successe of al future ages. The chiefest pointes of so large commendacion, which so many recordes of antiquitye do attribute unto the greate Dictatoure Cesar, consiste more in the clemencye hee used to his ennemies, being vanquished and under the awe of hys mercye, then in the mortall and manye battailes he fought agaynst the valiaunte Galles and Britons, or subduing the renowned Pompey. The great Alexander deserved no lesse honor for the pytie and curtesie hee used towards Sysigambis, the mother of Darius, with other desolate ladyes whyche hee tooke prysoners in the battaile foughte at Arobella, thenne fame in the conqueste of the kyng and contreye of Percia and Media: and at the death of the wyfe of Darius in hys canppe, he let fal no lesse effucion of teares then if hee had bene presente at the buriall of Olympias, his naturall mother. Neyther coulde hee have made so greate a conqueste of the whole easte worlde wyth hys small crewe and companye of Macedonians, if he had not subdued more contreys by clemencye thenne force of armes. Besydes, who is ignorante of the late curtesye of Don Roderico Vivano of Spayne; who, all bee it, myghte have revenged th' infydelytye of Don Pietro thenne kyng of Aragon (for that hee wente abowte to ympeshe his expedicion agaynst the Sarazins) being then at Granado, did not only forbear to punish hym or put hym to ransom, but also, being his prisoner by order and lawe of armes, dismissed him into his contreye with no lesse honor then belonged to his estate, withoute any exaction of his person or realme. Wherin, for my parte, the more I reave in the rariety of their noble vertues, so muche the more oughte I to increase my indevor in th' ymitacion of the like examples. And, of the contrary, what greate cause have I to preferre a continuation of the grudge ended alredye by warre; or why shoulde I sturre up eftesones a freshe remembrance of the faulte alredye forgiven? What injury have they don to me

DISCOURSE
I

Yt is more
easie to con-
quer by clem-
encie then by
crueltie.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE or mine, which was not returned unto them without interest of double revenge? Admit their predecessours have bene enemies to my house: have they not borne a more harde penance then the greatnes of their offence deserved? What cause have I then to renew the alarum of their miserie; or why stay I to succoure their desolate state in some satisfaction of the injuries they have received by me and mine? Besides, the wrathe of God accordyng to the wordes of the Apostle, is alwaies hanginge over the heades of suche as seame to take pleasure in the affliction of their neighbour, rejoyce in the misfortune or misery of another. If all theis lacke sufficient force to mortifie the remembrance of auncient malice within me, and, in exposing (contrarie to the expectation and opinion of the world) a wonderful example of vertue, to move me to releve his distresse that dispaireth of all succour, and reclaim by liberalitie the friendship of him, who, if he ever offended, is alreddie pardoned, like as also if his innocency have bene abused by me and mine—my conscience calleth me to a remorse, in rendring satisfaction in so nedeful a time. Yet am I drawn by a band of further dutye, and incensed by a somaunce or special instigacion of the honor and service which my harte hath alreddie vowed on the behalfe of her whose beauty and vertue deserves a greater meede then the uttermost that I can do, eyther for the contentement of her, or consolation of her brother. For, like as ther is no man (onlesse he bee utterlye devested from the gyfte of humanitye) being passioned with equall affection, and somoned by semblable desire to doo some notable service to my deare Angeliqua, as I am, that woulde not racke hys power to the highest pyn, to take awaye the chiefe causes of her dolefull teares, and restore her to a spedie contentment convenient for her merite; so, in lovinge her, I muste also imbrace suche as shee accomptes and (by good righte) are moste deare unto her. And, if I will make a declaration of the true zeale I beare her, why do I staie to expose it in so nedefull a time, and on the behalfe of him whome shee loveth no lesse then herselfe, attending even now the fatall stroake of the morderinge sworde for a tryflinge due of a thousande florentes? And why shoulde I doubte to make it

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

known in publike that only the force of love hathe made me trybutary to the faire Angeliqua? For seinge that kinges, and the greateste monarkes of the worlde, do drawe under the yoke of his awe, it is not for me to eschewe that by speciall pryviledge, whiche is incidente to all men by nature: neyther ought I herein to refuse the offer of my destenie, nor straungers to enter into muche marvaile, if I (being of the mettall of other men, and subject to no lesse impression and passions of mynde then the reste) do make presente dedication of my harte and service to her, whose vertue I am sewer is so invincible agaynst all adversitie, that neyther necessitie, nor the moste extreme message that fortune can send her, is hable to make her forfeyte the leaste pointe of her honestie, or forgette the renowme of the genealogie wherof she is discended. Wherin, as honest love hath sturred up this mocion in me with composicion to expose immediatlye the frutes and effects of semblable vertue; so the spedye delyverye of thy brother (oh! Angelyqua) shal argue sufficientlye to all men, that it is only the regarde of thy beawtie that hath paid the price of his raunsem, and removed frome his tender legges the heavy yrons whiche the penaunce of harde imprisonemente had unjustlye enjoyned unto him: tryumphinge, also, with this increase of further glorye, that onlye the regardes and glauncis of thy glisteringe eyes have made a breach into the harte whiche earste hathe defyed the malice and uttermoste of all force, and made hym bowe of his owne kinde that never colde bee broughte to bende or stowpe to any of what degree or condition so ever they were. And thou, Seigneur Charles, for thy parte, hast this dave gained so assured and perfecte a frende, that, if thou wilt confirme the league by franke consente, th'amytie shall not be onlye mutuall betwene us till deathe discharge the same by seperation of oure bodies, but also remeyne no lesse indissoluble to the posterytie and succession of bothe oure races for ever. And as in the firste worke of this newe societie, I will not only stryve to excede the in showe of perfecte friendshippe, but also make the waye open, by my example, to all degrees of nobilitie to attaine to the like honour by semblable vertue; so I pro-

DISCOURSE
I

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE I nounce heare a further confirmation on my parte, with protestation, by the faythe and lyfe of a gentleman, to embrace the and thy frendes with no lesse affection then my-selfe, and persecute thy enemyes with no lesse mortalitie then if they had conspired and put in use the destruction of the noble house of Salymbyno.' Wherwith, seinge the necessitie of the tyme craved rather an expedition of diligence then longer discourse or deliberation, hee tooke a bagge of a thousande duckattes, and went ymediatly to the Deputie Reccavor of peynall forfeitures of the state of Syenna, whom hee founde perusinge certaine accomptes in his stodie. And after he hadde taken him the bagge, with addition that there was the whole demaunde due to Don Charles Montanyn, he commaunded to give an acquittance withe his writte of delyvery from th' instante. But tellinge the contentes of the bagge he founde a surplusage of the some due by the prysoner; which, as he offred to restore, so the other did not onlye refuse to take it, but also woulde not departe the place till he had despatched one of his people to the maister of the jayle; who, perceiving a tender of the money, wythdrew the accion, and sent to fetch the prisoner out of his dongion and darke cabynet, clogged with heavye shackels and clinkinge yrons. Charles hearinge a noyse of bownsinge at doarres and opening of rustie lockes, imagined it had bene the cominge of some ghostlie father to heare his shryft and laste confession; and that the senatte (in respecte of the honour and estimation of his house) had graunted him the priveledge of a secreete execution within the prison, for avoydinge the publike shame whiche comonlye attendes the miserye of such as declare their laste testament uppon the skaffolde, in the gaze of all the worlde. And havinge alredye examyned his conscience accordinge to the shortnes of his leasure, so farfurthe as he seamed only to attende the fatall hower, desyred God eftsones to strengthen him with hys grace, not leavinge him wythout assistance in his journeye and passage so perillous; where oftentymes the moste assured, do not only waver, but utterly declyne, if they be not supported by his speciall favor. In the ende of which secret meditacion, he comended unto his goodnes the lyfe of his

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

deare syster; desiering, with humble teares, in a speciall DISCOURSE
petition and last requeste, to be protector, and defende her
alwayes from all assaltes and offers of ir:famie or dishonour.
Being thus brought into the hal of the jaylor, the torment-
ours or officers of the prison began to knocke of the boltes
from his legges, and present hym besydes (in show of counten-
ance) rather with arguments of consolation then cause of
freshe disquiet or distruste of delyverie. Which kinde of
curtesy, not loked for, stirred uppe in his troubled minde a
soddaine hope or expectation of good fortune, with an abso-
lute assuraunce, almoste, of that which affore he durste never
ymagine and muche lesse accompte to come to passe. Wherof,
notwithstandinge, the effecte appeared at th'instante. For
the jaylor, showinge him his letters of deliverie, tolde hym it
was in his power to use the benefytte of hys former lybertie.
'For,' saythe hee, 'the lawe is choked and fullye aunswered
for her due, and I satysfyed to the uttermoste of the charges
and fees of youre imprisonmente: desyeringe you, sir, if
you have founde worse entreatie att my handes thenne I
see youre offence hath deserved, to consider the charge of
my office, and to impute it rather to the straite comission
enjoynd mee by the senatt, then any desyer of myselfe to
deale with you in other sorte then the bond and respecte of
the dutifull zeale I beare you dothe require.'

Here is to be noted a wonderfull difference in the casual-
ties accidentall to man; and that the chaunges and altera-
tions in love be of a contrary disposition to the reste of the
passions that trouble the minde. Neyther nede we doubt
by the authoritie of this example, no lesse credible then of
great admiracion, but love is a certaine vertue of itself,
seinge it workes th'effect and exposeth suche frutes as seame
to resemble rather the operacion of a devine miracle then
the suggestion of our fraile fancye. For howe had this
Salymbyno redemed so frelye, and in a tyme of such nede,
the carefull Charles (beinge firmly confirmed in mortall
grudge as you have harde) if the verye vertue, whiche we
are not hable to tearme by a proper name in love, had not
broken, by force of a zealous affection, the angrie inclinacion
of his nature, and converted the humour of his auncent

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE I wrath into a compassion exceeding the imagination of manne. And as it is an ordenarye argument of humanitye to give succours to suche as neyther have deserved any thinge of us, and muche lesse wee never knewe nor sawe; because nature herselfe dothe somon us all to be thankefull to such as resemble ourselves in condition or callinge; so, that vertue deserveth treble comendation, whiche, exceedinge as it were th'authoritie of nature, doth force in us suche an inclynation, whiche dothe not only mortefye in our hartes the obstinat humor norished of long continuance, but makes us plyable to the thinges which we colde not so much as admitte afore into our cogitacions, and much lesse performe by any perswacion of the worlde. Wherof you maye note a familiar experience in the disposition of this Salymbyn; who suffred himselfe to be more overcome wyth the bewtie, vertue, and seamelye behavior of Angeliqua then with any humilitie or importunate sute of her brother, although hee hadde layen prostrate a thousande tymes afore his kneec. And what hart is tempered with the mettall of such induracion that is not mollified and made tractable by the regardes of so rare a misterie as the exquisite beautye of this Syennoyse? Or who wil not slacke the raine of his loftie stomacke, and stoupe to the somance of suche a paragon; humblynge himselfe withall every waye, to get the good will of her that gave place to no creature in the worlde for all perfections of God and nature? Neyther is there any reason at all to charge hym with imputacion of foly that indevoureth to honor and imbrace in his hart the beautye and other giftes of so vertuous a ladye; nor his travaile meritorious of other name, then the title of honest exercise, who, addinge an exact diligence to his dutifull zeale and serviee in the pursute of her whose vertues procure his affection, hath his harte armed onelye with an upright meanyng of sincere integritye, and the desier of his minde tendyng to none other ende then a consomation of an honest and lawfull request. But, for the contrary, of this honest societie I accompte hym not worthie to have the ayre breath upon hym, who, practisinge onely to seduce and corrupte the chastetye of honest dames, hath no respect to the vertue

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

I

of honest and true love; but, sekynge only to satisfy the appetit of his sensual luste, doth embrace the exterior partes of a woman, and commendes simplye the tree charged with leaves, without regardyng the frut which makes it worthie of commendacion and fame. Herewith, it can not be muche from our purpose, to enterlarde this digression with the authoritie of a brief note whiche I founde written in a Frenche booke, on the behalfe of the sinceritey which ought to appeare in women; comparinge the younge ladye bearynge yet the name of a mayde to the glisterynge flower in the pleasaunt springe, untill, by her constancie and chaste behavior, subduing utterlie the wanton mocions of the fleshe, she expose to the worlde the precious frutes derived of so great a vertue, and give absolute experience of her undoubted pudicitie. 'For other wayes' (saith he) 'she is in no other degree for worthie renowme then the young soldiour, whose contenance, albeit, argueth the corage of his hart, yet his capteine hath no reason to gyve judgement of his valiauntnes, nor cause to reape muche credit in him in any expedition or exploite againste th' enemye, tyll he see an approved effect in dede of that which he promiseth so largely by his outward apparance: but when he fyndeth an absolute confirmation of the exterior likelihodes by the inward vertu and valyauntnes of the mynd, it is then that he doth not only embrace hym, but preferreth hym afore the reste as a speciall pattorne to ymitate his vertues.' Even so, besides that the croune of immortal glorye attendes youe ladyes, who, by withstandyng th' assaults and importunities of the fleshe, do give to your selfe the true title of honest women, not by force or awe of constraint, but by the valyaunt resistance of your most chaste and invincible hart; yet also, the monument of your vertues being graved in pillars of eternitie, and advanced to the height of the highest theatrey in the worlde, shal remaine as a mirroer or worthy spectacle, to procure all posterities, not onelye to treade the pathe of semblable vertues, but also to yelde you a continuall adoracion after your death by the remembraunce and viewe of your chaste and vertuous life. Wherewith, wishyng you all no lesse desier to lyve wel, then the most of

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE I you are greedy of glory, I leave you to the remorse of your owne consciences, and presentes you here withe the remainder of my promise touchyng the sequele of Charles Montanyn ; who, being out of prison as you have harde, repaired immediatly to his house, with intent to comfort her whom he knewe to be in greater dollour and distresse, and as nedeful of consolacion as himselfe seemed desirous of repose, being so long forewatched in a filthy prison. And knocking at the gates of his pallais, the mayd that opened the dore, and saw it was her maister, mounted, with more speed then an ordinarie pase, and tolde Angeliqua the deliverye and approche of her brother. Wherunto, what addicion or protestation her mayd seemed to make, her troubled mynde wolde give no credit (suche great impossibilitie do wee accompte in the execucion of those thinges whiche we chiefly desier), but, seaminge no lesse amazed with the misterie then Saint Peter being suddainly taken furth of the prison of Herode by the Aungel, stode as though she had bene dreaming of the dissolution of the worlde, without apparence of sence or argument of lyvely mocion in any part of her, til the presence of her brother (being now in her chamber) seemed to breath in her an ayre of fresh consolacion and lyfe : and, dismissing from th' instant the misterie of her domme traunce, received eftsones her former use and libertie of senses. Wherewith, converting her dolorous regards and teares of auncient dule into a passion of such sodain gladnes, that, being at the point to congratulat his coming with words, she felt a second impediment of spech by the operation of present joye which she toke in beholding his face, that she fel down at his fete, embrassing and kissing his knees with no lesse signes and shewe of a gladsome mynde then if by som miracle he had bene raised from death to life. Wherewith, certaine ladies, her kynswomen, assistinge her dolorous distresse, having restored her laste traunce, and doubtyng eftsones to fal into the like passion, sent for their husbandes, with other the friends of Montanyno, as wel to rejoyce his happie delivery, and so to avoyde al occasions of further traunces in his sister, as also to excuse their negligence in not assisting his late miserie. But

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

Charles, dissimuling that which he thought of their discourtesie towards himself, gave them chief thanks for their frendship in comforting his syster, which he construed to as great an honor and argument of good wil as if they had employed it on the behalf of himself. Wherwith he dismissed them, devining notwithstanding what he shold be that had made so large declaration of so great a vertu, and sorowful without measure that he knew him not, to th'ende he might not onely requite so rare a courtesie, but also excede him in liberalitie by a franke offer of himself and all that he hath within the world. He seamed not so ignoraunt of th'author of so great a benefit as his syster in treble doubtte on the same behalf; persuading herself, notwithstanding, that the feare of death had made him conveigh a secret sale of his landes in the contrey to him which first broked it; and that this doubtte which seamed to trouble hym was onely a darke vaile to conceile the trothe and kepe it from her knowledge; or rather his longe imprisonment, with disquiet of minde during his trouble, had stalled his sences, and made him rave in that sorte. Wherin she was in equall doubtte of them al, till he resolved her to the contrary. Wherewith, departing for that night, they repaired to their several chambers, where the Montanyn had more desier of slepe then hable to admit any rest: for that he spent al that night in contemplation and contrarietie of thoughtes; making an assemblie in his minde of every shape and figure of such his frends as he was hable to imagin to be the workers or cause of so great a benefit, somtime preferring one, somtime presenting an other, without touching, notwithstanding the perfect whit, or naming him that justely had deserved the meede of so great a merite, and to whome he acknowledged no lesse bonde of dutie then to them that were the first causers of his comming into this worlde. Wherein, passing that night the pictures of a thousand men, his bed seamed to serve him as a wyde and large plaine, or some rowmey alley, or close arbor within a thicke wood, to rol up and downe, making his discourse with sondry sortes of diverse ymaginations, until the discoverynge of the redde globe, or forronner of the day, somoned Apollo to harness

DISCOURSE

I

Parentes.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE his horse, and begin his course over our Hemisphere: when
I he rise, and wente to the officer of the fiske, of whome he
demaunded to know what he was that discharged the debte
of his late forfeiture. 'He whom you can skarcely ymagin'
(saith the receavour) 'hath exceded all your frends firme and
faithfull zeale towards you: to whom I have delivered the
releace of your imprisonment, but not the acquitaunce of
the money, because here is an overplus which I have here to
tender unto you with your general discharge.' Where-with
Charles, no lesse moved against him for the offer of the
money, then greved with the curious delay he seamed to use
in disclosing the name of so great a frend, requested him
eftsones to cut his suspense, and make hym know the man
to whom he was so much bounde. 'The rare vertue and
curtesie of Anseamo Salymbino' (saith he) 'hath preferred
cause of perpetual shame to al your frendes and allies, and
opened you the waye, not onelye to be equall, but excede
hym in semblable merit.' Wherewith he departed with an
infynity of conceiptes and constructions of the courtesie of
his enemye: and beyng at his house in a secrete gallerye,
voyde from all companye or occasion of disturbance, began
to discourse diversely of th'accident; but chiefly what
shoulde sturre up such generositie, with inexpectable
humanitie, in hym, who, with his parentes, and all the
power he mighte make, had bene the onely and mortall
scourges of his whole house. At last, starting up, as it
were, out of a dead sleape, or newly delyvered from the
misterie of som sodaine qualme, began to remember some
glees of frendshy, which he had heretofore noted in Salim-
bino on the behalfe of his syster: which appeared chiefly in
the often pale-walkes and purmenades he made by the gate
of hys pallais; where, yf by chaunce his eyes encountred
with the viewe of Angeliqua, he forgot not to preferre a
reverence and salutacion, rather of an affectioned hart then
a minde charged with grudge or any kinde of enymitie.
Wheruppon, he resolved immediatly, that the onelye beantye
of his syster did pleade for his lyfe, and purchase his
deliverye; concludyng withall in his mind, that, as the noble
hart is soonest enclined to love, so, when true affection hath

The noble
harte soonest
inclined to
love.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

once made a breacke into the intralles of the valyant and princely minde, it is impossible but she shoulde expose marvellous effectes and fruites of honest vertue. Like as also, the ymp derived of noble kinde, and discended of the progenie of renoumed predecessours, can not so maske or cover his norriture and education, but the vertue of the minde wil aduance herselfe in the countenance, with shew of nobilitie in the face, and preferre a facilitie in that whiche the voice of the worlde hath not onelye judged impossible, but also absolutely persuaded that he wold never be broughte to do it, eyther of free consent or force of any awe or allurementes.

Wherin, for his parte, because he would neyther be surmounted in honestie, nor noted of any spot of ingratitude, determined to revenge the good tourne he had received with suche prodigall recompense, that he woulde seame no lesse liberall in retorning th'intereste of the benefit receyved then the other treble meritorious for th'example of soo rare a vertue. Wherefore, havinge nothinge worthy to present the frendshipp of Salimbino but himselfe and his sister, determined to impart his present resolution with the fayre Angeliqua; and after dispose themselves, by mutuall assent, to make a tender and franke offer of that whych was in theym, to be imployed on the behalfe of him and his as he lyste to ymagine the occasion. Wherin, because he was now in the contrey, without intent to retourne to the citie till the expiracion of some iiij or v dayes, Charles, fynding hys conscience heavelve charged with a debte on his behalfe, thought to practise for hym in his absence, as wel as he was myndefull of his late misfortune; and therupon procured his syster into a gardein, far from anye haunte or companye to troble them, where he brake with her in this sort:—

‘Amongest all the chaunges and conversions of mortall affaires (my deare syster) there is none a more familiar precedent of the malice of fortune then he that is touched with diversitie of evils, nor anye so greate a paterne or example of her mobitie as they that fynde often change of estate. And yet, for all that, we ought not to suffer any adversitie to deminishe the vertue and constancie of the mind; neyther is it our part to geve so grevous a sentence

DISCOURSE
I
Montanyno
seketh to
requit the
good torne of
his enemye.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE

I

Fortune not to be holden against her wil, and God is bound to no time.

of the state of mans mortalitie, as eyther to denie mercie to such as be in misery, or dispair of compassion whenne our selves be touched with affliction; seing that, as thinges mortall are full of chaunge, and no man hath perpetuall felicitie, so there is no man certaine of any thinge that he hath; and God is bound to no time; and fortune being slipperie of herselfe, and not hable to be holden againste her will, dothe never give so great felicitie, but she enjoyneth a double penaunce with trouble of treble annoy in respect of the benefyt. And besides, he that falleth from the uttermost spray, or height, of the highest tree, findeth lesse ease and more daunger, then suche as fele themselves taken from the lowe and shallow braunches, supported upon the firme earth. All which I prefer unto you in this place, as wel by a peculyar instigacion and remorce of mynde, restoring a newe remembrance of the noble condicion of our auncestors, the auncient glory of our race, and former renowne of the house of Montanyno, as also to sturre up in us both a freshe supplie of sorowful teares on the behalfe of the late depopulation and utter ruine of the same. Wherin, for my parte, as often as I beholde the riche seates and stately buildings somtime the resident and ordinarie places of abode of our fathers and grandfathers; when my desolate eyes, glaunsinge upon divers corners of this cytie, do fede upon the viewe of sondrye skutchions and pendels of our armes, bearinge a special marke or badge of th'anti-quitie of our famuly; or that in the cathedral churches, or chiefe temples of this cytie, I peruse the inscription of so many statelye tombes and perpetuall monumentes of marble, shrowdyng the bodies of so many noble knightes and notable captaines discended of the lyne of Montanyno; but chieflye as often as I put my foote within the entrey of this pallais the very reste and last remainder of them whose authoritie, onely hath earst governed the state of this common welth, —I fele myselfe so passioned with inward grefe, and my hart within distillinge drops of blodd on the behalfe of so great a desaster, that I wishe, more often then I am harde, to be taken awaye from the dolourous regarde of suche wretched desolation, to th'ende that I alon mighte not live as the od

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

relike or uttermost reste of our subverted house. And albeit, we may chalenge the first place in the beadrol of unhappy wretches, seinge our fortune hath exchaunged our auncient felicitie for a present lyfe of extreme miserye, yet, yf there be anye cause of consolation in adversitie, we have raison to joye in the condition of our state; chefly for that we are not justely to be charged with imputacion of evil or dishonest trade any waie; and that, notwithstanding the raging malice of our fortune, with the force of povertie pinchynge extremely, the discourse of our lyves hath so confirmed the generositie of our auncestors, that we kepe the consent of al voices to be nothing inferior to the best of them in any respect of vertue or showe of true nobilitie. For I have alwaie indevored to observe this one rule and discipline of the renowmed Emperour and Captaine, Marcus Anthonius; who persuadeth, that, as the heyght of estate ought not to alter the goodnes of nature, so the frowarde disposition of fortune oughte not to take awaye or diminishe the constancie of the mynde; with this addicion, that he beareth her malice best that hydes his miserye moste. Besides, thus muche dare I advouche of myselfe, that as I was never presented with the offer of any good tourne, whiche I have not thankefullie requited to th' uttermoste; so I have not bene a nigarde of anye thinge I have on the nedefull behalfe of my frende or other companion, detestyng always that anye jote of ingratitude shold staine the reputation wherin I have lyved hytherunto. For, as amongst a number of vices in men nowe a dayes, the note of unthankfulnes is no lesse detestable then any of the reste; so, for my parte, I wishe the rigour of th' Athenyans lawe upon hym who seames eyther forgetfull of the benefyt passed, or unthankfull to the frendship of hym that brought succours to his necessitie when he dispaired of relief. Wherin (my deare sister) albeit you maye happelye imagine the cause of this longe circunstaunce, yet can you give no certeine judgement of the ende or conclusion, nor divine ryghtely the meanyng of the misterye whiche I purpose to reveale unto you. The threatnyng perill whiche earste hovered to cut in sonder the fyllet of my lyfe, is of so late a tyme that

DISCOURSE
I

Height of
estate ought
not to alter
the goodnes
of nature.

The Atheni-
ans punished
unthankful-
nes by death.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE I am sewer youre minde hath not yet dismissed the remembrance of so fearefull a tragedye; neyther have you forgotten, I knowe, howe (as it were by speciall miracle) I was boughte out of the handes of the executioner of justice, and redemed from the rigorus sentence of the partiall senatt; without th' assistance of any my parentes or alyes, by eyther simple offer of worde or effect. Wherein, as I am warned by this experience, not onelye to putt small confidence in anye of my kinsmen hereafter, but also to reappose no assurance at all in their flatteringe show of fained face, so I have tasted of so great a pleasure at the handes of hym who never deserved well of mee—nor I cause to ymagyne any one droppe of humanitey in hym on my behalfe—that, yf I do ryght to his vertue, I have reason to admitt hym not onlye amonge the felowshippe, but also the firste and chiefe of my deare frendes. For, beinge pressed so muche wyth the iniquitie of the tyme, wyth freshe assaltes of newe afflictions, and forsaken with all of my nearest frendes, I had reason to ymagyne, and cause to feare, that th'only malice of oure mortall enemyes (for the extirpation of the whole stocke and roote of oure race) had bene the workers of my laste trouble and daunger of deathe. But (good syster) in this distruste, I have abused the vertue of our late adversary, deservynge to indure pennance for entringe into conceites of conspiracye agaynste hym whose late benefyte (exceedinge the ymaginacion of all men) hath made me bounde to honor the remembrance of his name with a debte of dutie, so longe as nature shall phan in mee the breathe of lyfe. For in place where I feared most daunger, I founde most savetie; and where I expected least sewertye, I encowntred moste assurance. And that hande, whiche I attended only to give the fatal blowe of my destruction, hath not only removed all occasions or offers of present perill, but become the chiefest pillor and proppe of mine honour and lyfe hereafter. Wherin, because you shal be partaker of the playnnesse of my tale, as wel as you have used patience in the hearinge of the circumstance, yt is Anseamo Salymbyno, the son and heir of our aunciente persecutours, who hath made so manyfeste a declaration of his affected zeale towards

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

our howse, that, in takinge your brother owte of the handes of th' unrighteous senate, and present daunger of perentorye destruction, he hath seamed so lavishe of his liberal mynde that, in place of vii C florentes, he hath paide a thousande duckattes, for the ransom of hym who judged hym the moste crewell enemye of the worlde. What argumente of noble harte is this, or howe seldom dothe a man encounter suche rare frutes of vertues? Frenedes, knitt together by a speciall league of amytie or mutual vowe of frendshippe, do oftetymes make the worlde wonder of the sondry frutes and effectes of constancie which appeareth betwene theime: but where the mortall enemye, beinge neyther reconciled, nor required nor demaunding any assurance for the pleasure he dothe, paieth not only the debte of his adversarye, but restoreth his state when he is at pointe to performe the laste of his fatal somaunce, I thinke it excedes all the consideration of suche as use to discourse uppon the doinges of menne. I knowe not what title to geve to the acte of Salymbyno, nor howe to tearme this his curtesye, yf not that his doinges deserve a better meede thenne the renoune of Daymon and Pithias, or other moste loyall frenedes, whome the writters doo favor wyth suche surnames of glorie. But as I am a chiefe witnes of hys vertue; so the example of hys presente honestie hath stirred uppe suche an affected humor wythin me, that, eyther I wyl dye in th' indevor, or els I wyl be equall, yf not hable to excede hym, in the retourne hys liberalitie. Wherein, beinge justlye bounde to engage the beste parte in me for the recompense of that good torne which gave increase to my lyfe, I am to crave a speciall assistance of you (syster) for the complotte of the devise whiche I have alreadye ymagyned, and fullye resolved to performe; to th' end I maye bee onelye bounde to you for the acquitaunce of the liberalytye of Salimbino, by whose helpe, you, that earste lamented the losse of libertye and lyfe of youre brother, maye nowe congratulate hys healtie and happye delyverye. Where wyth the faire Angeliqua, fully resolved by this laste report of her brother, that it was Salembino whyche hadde surmounted all her parentes and frenedes in the delyverye of her onelye comfort, and consolacion of their whole howse, made a frank

DISCOURSE

I

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE I promyse of her ayde in this sorte:—‘Like as’ (saith she) ‘I was never hable to ymagyne that your delyvery was wrought by so rare a meane, nor that our enemyes (dissolvinge the remembraunce of aunciente quarrell) wolde retire to a care and conservation of the health and lyfe of the Montanyns; even so, I thinke youre debte is the greater by the awthoritie of him that hath done the benefyte; and more worthy of ample consideracion thenne if the good torne hadde bene don by any of your parentes and allies. For thymitacion of a vertue oughte to excede the example of the awthor, chieflye wher th’occasion is deryved of suche an unlikelihod that the compasse of brayne seames insufficiente to ymagine so verteous an acte. Wherin, for my parte, if I were as hable as I am willinge, his curtesye shoulde bee returned at soo large an intreste, that hymselfe shoulde thinke his benefyt nothinge in respecte of the recompence, and the worlde to witnes the generositie of the Montanyns. But havynge no waye th’assistance of fortune, to presente him with any thinge that may ballance with the merite of hys curtesye, and beinge besides a maide withoute accesse to his house, by reason of the smal hawnte I use with the ladyes his kinswommenne, I can do no more but yelde honoure to hys vertue wythe secrete thanks in my harte, wythe acknowledginge the debte untill wee bee hable to discharge it wyth equall recompense. Albeit (brother) if you have devised the meane wherin you accompte mee necessarye to be ymployed, doubtte not of mee in anye respecte, soo that myne honoure onely bee not distressed.’

The answer of
Angelyqua
to her
brother.

‘Amongest ann infinitte discourses appearynge severallye in my unquiette mynde’ (saythe hee) ‘I came not reste uppon anye likelye cause or meane to worke th’effecte of so rare a curtesye in thys gentlemanne on my behalfe, nor to procure hym in soo soddayne a momente to breake the bonde of aunciente grudge, and to converte his naturall hate into a frendshippe withoute a seconde or comparison, if it be not the fyer of a covert love, kindled of longe time within the tender parts of his intrails, and suppressed with a wonderfull greife to himself, til, now that, encountringe so convenient an occasion to sette abroache the vessell of his

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

burninge desier, withe meane to evente the flame that wyll DISCOURSE
no longer smother but bulke out into open show, he makes I
open declaracion of that whiche he can no longer conceile.
Ah! wonderfull force and vertue in love! who hath power
to converte the minde oppressed with passion of collar into
a disposition tractable beyond all expectacion, and in one
momente to change that wherein all men judged an ympos-
sybylitie of convecion. It is only thy bewtie, Angelyqua, Love hath
with respect of other thy perfections, whiche have trans- power to
formed our late enemye into the parson of a perfecte frende. worke a
It is the generall fame of thy honest and verteous life that facilitie in
hath somnioned Salymbyno to deliver thy miserable brother, that whiche
abandoned of all his frendes and in dispaire of any good all men thinke
fortune. Oh! noble gentleman and harte of a kinge! lack- ympossible.
inge no kinde of magnanymitie, what meanes, alas! have I
to approche that honest liberalitie, wherunto thou haste
bounde me by so sewer obligacion? I lyve to serve the,
and am ready to dye to do the pleasure. Mine honor is
reserved to be ymployed by the, and my goodes and lyvinge
attende thy summonce, to dispose of them at thy pleasure.
Thow haste, also, made suche a stealthe of my harte that
onely death is hable to redeme it. What is there thenne
remaininge, but that you, Angeliqua, remove incontynent
the vaile of al supersticion and unseamely crueltie, in dis-
posinge thyselve to be thankfull to hym who hath won thy
good will by the wager and warranty of verteous love; and
who, as a fyrste earnest penny of his service and dutye
towards the, dyd presente a thousande duckettes for the
raunsome of myne honour and lyfe: whyche, if they remeyne
of equall care unto the nowe as th'abundance of thy late
teares with dollorus regardes did earste argue to all the
worlde (whereof also thou gaveste a chiefe declaration in
thy free consente to sel mine inheritance for the redemption
of my thraldom) sticke not to dispose thyselve now so
frankely on my behalfe, that I maye revenge the favor
whiche Salymbino hath don me for the respect of thy love,
with a present no lesse precious and rare then his acte is
justly meritorious of perpetuall fame in all ages? And as
hee refused not turne up the bottom of his coffers to raunsome

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE I my libertie; so, lackinge the consente of equal fortune to retorne his curtesye with semblable payment, lett us make a present of your bewtie; whiche I am sewer he wil not abuse any waye, consydering that he wantes no furniture of vertue whiche is necessarie for the adorninge of a noble harte. Which, as it is al the meane I have to make a counter change of his benefytt and bringe me out of debt with him whose money lyeth in pawne for the libertie of my life; so, I besече you, good sister, consider the justice of my requeste, and pronounce a resolucion in suche sorte as, requitinge that whiche is due to him, I maye yelde you alone al homage, and holde my life only of you. But if your aunswere putt me eyther in doubtte or dispaire of this meane to make even with so true a creditor, assure yourselve I wil rather abandon both citye and countrey, and disclaime the company of al my frends, then lyve amongst you with the name of an unthankful parson, or be pointed at of the worlde not to requite so great a good torne as the deliverie and savinge of my life. Wherefore, seinge that in you alone consistes the whole reappose of your desolate brother, determine eyther his abode and companye with you for ever, or els his departure, within these thre daies, to wast the remainder of his wretched life in continual wander in forreine soiles, with absolute intente never to sette foote within any parte of Italy hereafter.' Wherewith, the pore Angeliqua became no lesse astonied and voyede of sence then if she had bene of a soddayn assailed with an apoplexie. Albeit, the passion of her mynde, quarrellinge so longe within that her stomake seamed to pant as it were the breathe of ii litle bellowes upon a fordge, brake out at laste by a watery vent at her eyes, distillinge whole rivers of teares, and restored her to the use of her speche, which she uttered to her brother in this sorte:—' I have often rede,' saithe shee, ' that it is easye for an innocente to fynde wordes to speake, and verye harde for a man in myserie to kepe a temperaunce in his tale; but I doubtte I shall finde, by a present experience of myselve, that the defence of a prisoner is not only superfluous but also hatefull, seaminge rather to reprove then enforme the judge. Wherein I am the rather perswaded

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

(my deare brother) for that the tearmes of thy laste requeste, DISCOURSE
dependinge upon yssues of extremeties, do argue bothe a
justice to performe thy desyer, and an incyvitie in the in
makinge so unreasonable a demaunde; the one, challenginge
a consente in me by th'ympression of nature and bonde of
dutifull zeale on my behalf towards the; the other charg-
inge the wyth iniquitie for the respecte whiche thou wouldest
have me to do. But, seinge everye requeste craveth a retorne
of aunswere, and the greater qualytie or condition the cause
is of, the greater delyberacion oughte wee to use—chiefelye
where it ymportes eyther th'absolute breache or firme con-
firmation of the league of lyneall consanguynitie—I beseche
you graunte no lesse patience to the wordes of my replie
then I have bene contented to favor your vehement protes-
tacion with a dollorous scilence; neyther let me any longer
inveighe in myne aunswere then I shall seam to preferre
good reason to justefye my juste complainte: the cause
wherof doth marche with more alarums of annoye thorow
all the partes in me, then if I were presently pinched with
the most grevous tormentes of the worlde; seeing that my
life, with th'exposition of the same, is nothings in respecte
of that which thy ymportunities do laboure to set abroche
and put in vent, for the onely satisfaction of a prodigall
liberalitye. If the price of my life woulde suffice for the
raunsom of myne honor and appaisement of thy appetit,
thou couldest no soner ymagyn thy contentement then the
same shoulde be exposed on thy behalfe; neyther wolde I
take halfe the tyme to performe it which I have used in
makinge the promise. I thought, alas! the late delyvery of
my brother had brought to us all an undowted dispense
of further trouble, and that he had buryed in the pitt of
his ymprisonmente all occasions of further disquiette. And
who wolde have judged but, in the laste assalte and unjuste
offer of undeserved deathe, fortune had spitt the uttermoste
of her poysened malice; and that in devestinge herselfe
frome the theatrye or throane of rigorous crueltie, she had
also broken in peces the bloddye arrowes wherewith of so
longe time shee hathe persecuted our desolate howse, and
pronounced trewyce at last to the wearye miseries of the

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE I wretched state of the Montanins? But alas! unhappie creature that I am, I fynde, nowe, our destenie is rather deferred then our miserye at an ende; seing that that unjuste goddess of unworthy revenge and moste cruell step-mother, invading mee wyth more fury then affore, doth threaten my yonge and tender yeares with more perentorye plages then ever shee thondred uppon any of my former race. For if ever shee pursewed oure fathers, graundefathers, or anye predecessours, with mortall affliction, or intente of utter ruyne, it is nowe shee hath chosen her tyme to put to her laste hande to the extreame extirpacion of the miserable reliques and remeyndor of oure pore house; eyther by the wilfull losse and perpetuall exile of the my deare brother, or untymely death of thy dysolate Angeliqua, who canne not make prostitucion of her chastetye wythout the sacrafyses and oblation of her miserable life. What is destenye, if this be not the consent and judgement of the heavens, with resolution to supplant the stock and grafts of our house; seing that I, a simple girle, without force, voide of assistance of age or experience, is constrained to admitt th'one of two evils; wherof the choice oughte, and is hable, to amase the moste wise and experienced creature that this day enjoyeth the benefytt of mortall life? Alas! my harte faileth me, and reason, forsaken and flede from me, hath lefte my minde ballauncinge in suche confucion and contraryetie of thoughtes, that beinge broughte to th'extremetye of two distresses of equal perill and indifferente terror, I doubte whether to comit my life to shorte and sharpe penaunce, or prolonge my dayes in pynge dollor and secrete care of minde. For the sentence which thou haste pronounced of both our estates is, eyther to make a seperation by extreme exile of my brother (who is no lesse deare in my harte then the tendrest part of myne eye; and in whom, nexte after God, I have reposed the whole assurance of my hope and consolacion of life) or els, in conservinge him, I see myselfe at pointe to bee constrained to make marchandise (I can not tell in what sorte, nor for what price) of that precious treasure, whiche, once loste, is not to be reclaimed by any meanes; and, for the garde wherof, al women of uprighte

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

I

minde, honoring vertue or desierous of reputacion, oughte rather to expose theimselves to a thousande mortall perilles and hazardes of deathe, if nature and life were hable to abide soo manye encownters, then to suffer one spotte of infamie to staine or corrupt this precious ornament and gifte of chastitie: which, as it is the only support and decoration of the life of an honest woman; so, for a contrarye, she that loseth the possession of so riche a jewel or devesteth herselfe of the title and crown of so great a glorye, although she seame to live, and kepe place amonge other creatures, yet is she dead in effecte, and her life recorded in the booke of blacke defame as a witnes againste herselfe in the latter daye, and in the meane tyme a continual reproch and objection of shame to such as she leaveth to succede her in kindred or name. How can that lady or gentleman marche amongst the crewe of vertuous dames, whose honor is eyther in doubtte, or reputacion in dekaye, by the losse of her honour, but that the blod of shame, appearyng in all parts of her face, wil not only discover her faulte, but makes her wearye of her lyfe by the remorse or remembrance of so foule a forfeiture? How coulede the daughters of the Emprour Augustus seame justly meritorious of the title of true nobilitie, or worthely deserve to be called the children of such a father, after their sondry villaines and lascivious trade of lyving hadd dispoyled them of the giftes and ornamentes of vertue, presentyng theim (to the eyes of all the worlde) as creatures not worthy to have the common ayre to breath upon them? What honor hadd Faustina in wearyng the imperial crowne upon her head; seyng she had loste the crowne and garlande of chastetie, by her disordred and dishonest life? Sewer she oughte not to enjoy the breath of lyfe, nor participatt with the presence or benefitt of the earth, that makes lesse stoare of her honestie then of the dearest part belongyng to her soule or bodye: neyther is shee worthie to be admitted amongst the felowshipp of vertues Dames, that departeth with so precious an ornament at other price then the exchange or loasse of her lyfe. Notwithstanding, the writers of former tyme have done manifest wronge to diverse simple women, whose vertue, in preseryng

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE their honest name with true title of pudicitie, deserveth
I rather an everlastyng remembrance, with notes of universall
prays in pillers of eternitie, then to be buried without
pompe in the tombe of darke oblivion. Ah dear brother!
what is become of thy auncient generosity and vertue of
minde whych heretofore thou haste exposed on the behalfe
of the honest and chast ladies of thy kinred and race?
Haste thou converted that care and curious zeale, whiche
hytherunto all men have noted in the on my behalfe, into a
present intente to take awaye my lif and renowme after my
death? Because thy perversed fortune hath deprived the
of the moste part of thy possessions and lyvings, wilt thou,
therefore, that I make lyke sale of min honor, whyche I
have kepte hetherunto with so greate watche and diligence?
Wilte thou, my deare brother, that Anseamo do triumphe,
with more glorie in the victorie of my virginity then if he
had constrained the rest and remainder of our miserable race
to passe by the edge of his mordrynge sword? Remember
alas! that the hurtes and diseases of the soule be farre more
vehement, and of a contrary disposition, to them which afflict
and annoy the body. And is it I, unhappie and thrys wretched
girle, that must do penance for th'offences of us all? Is this
the justice of the gods, or rigorous dome of my angry destenies?
If the heavens have resolved my ruine, why do they not rather
committ me to fatal execution then present me, upon the
Venus. alter of filthie ymolacions or offerings, to the devouring
goddesse of filthie lust; and to appease the appetit of a
young man, who, peradventure, desiereth no other pray then
the spoiles of my honor? How happie was the noble
Virginia of Rome, who was slaine by the handes of her
owne father, to avoyde violacion of her bodye by the lascivious
Emprour Appius, the common enemy to the honor
and reputacion of al honest ladies! Alas! why staith my
brother to purchasse like renowme by performing semblable
execution upon me, rather than, of his owne mind, to
become the infamous minister of my life, readye to abide
the daunger of dishoneste force,—if God become not the
protectour of his servant, and take my cause into his hande?
Why dothe death deferre to do his dutie, or staye to dip

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

I

the end of his venomous dart in the congeiled blod of my dieng sprit, and dispatch me with spede to visit the shadowes of my happy predecessours; who, understanding my present distresse, can not be voyde (I am sewer) of passion on the behalfe of my wretched extremity? Why did not God and nature give power to the midwyf to smother me at th' instant that her cursed handes received me from the wombe of my mother, rather then, in preservyng my lyfe with the milke of tender norriture, to make my youth subject to sondry sortes of affliction, and now, in the age and expectation of quiet, to present me the choice of ij of the most mortall evils in the worlde? What counsel have I to assiste me in so doubtfull a case? Or whiche waye can I tourne me, where I am not indifferently assailed with remorse on the behalf of my brothers request, and shame, with desperacion, in the simple remembrance of the fact? Alas! shall I loose him whom nature and lawe of kinde, have named the one halfe of myselfe? And to commit th' effecte of his demande is no lesse dampnable afore God then if I did violence and force against myselfe with mine owne handes. Neyther have I remedie or reason to eschew either of theis evils, but by th' assistance of the, Oh! cruel Attropos! whom I besech, with the laste teares of this complaint, to whet thy fatall knif, and shred in sonder with spede the twyst of my wretched daies; least, in preventinge thy slacknes or slender haste, theis handes of mine undertake to supplie thine office with unnaturall revenge of my present sorow.' Wherewith her teares and sighes ceased upon a sodaine, and her tounge, foltering in her mouth, her complexion of face was also converted into a pale and ghastlye regard, in suche sorte as the passion of this traunce, stopping the conduites and course of her breath, she seamed to have as litle feeling or show of lyfe as the seat wheron she sat. Which, when Charles behelde, with resolution that the misterie contained neither vision, nor dreame, nor charme of deceit, but that his syster had bene as utterly without hope of recovery, as she seamed senceles, and without breath, overcome with dolor and dispair to lyve after her whome he onely had preferred to so wretched a

Angeliqua
falleth into a
sound.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE

I

death, fel upon a sodaine from the place wher he sat upon the grounde, without moving either hande or foote. The noise of whose fal restored Angeliqua to some litle rehala-tion and use of breath, recoveringe in like sorte the opening of her eyes, with a general mocion and feelyng in al her parts; and, being thus at libertie of free consideracion, her eyes disclosed immediatly the piteous estat of her brother, whom she judged now to have delivered her of further care to performe his requeste. Wherein, seing a generall retire of all his sences, and onely viewe of his deade bodye re-meynyng to encrease her doloure, she stode at the point to use the same revenge of herselfe that Thisbe dyd when she founde her frende dead. But finding his body warme, wyth some argument of recoverye, she forgat not the use of any medicine wherin she judged vertu to reclaime life. And falling withall flat upon the body of her deade brother, shee began to curse her fortune, and accuse the starres of crueltie; inveighing withal against the slender frendship of herselfe towardes hym who made no conscience to offer to dye, to preserve his patrimonie and inheritaunce only for her sustentation. In the ende, by th'applicacion of cer-teine medecines and odoriferous smels, sometime sprinkling colde water upon his face, dropping viniger into his mouth, and sometime rubbyng his temples and pulses, wyth other sleightes to revoke hym that is but halfe dead, she brake the bed of his traunce, openyng a vent to utter the course of his breath. Wherewith, also, his eyes disclosed and chalenged their wonted lyght, beholdinge with dolefull regardes his desolate syster; who, seinge all his partes replenished eftsones with vital mocions, that he was in case to understand and gyve judgment of her wordes, sayed unto hym:—'Seinge my mishap is so great that she will admit no dispense of her malice, and thou, deare brother, so whollie resolved in thy wilful imagination that I must yelde to thy somance, and become the minister of the sentence, of thy harte, more prodigall and bountiful then is convenient by the consent of raison, I am content to become thankfull accordyng to thy desyer, and more readye to performe thy requeste then thou haste raison to exacte so muche uppon

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

me. Wherefore, do away thy desperat regardes, and lookes not unlike to him that is plunged in a passion of trembling feare, receyvinge with gladnes the present offer of thy carefull syster, who here presentes herselfe the handmaide of thy will; gyvyng the ful commission to dispose of this pore carkasse at thy pleasure, and make a present of it to suche as thou accomptes thyselfe so greatly indebted unto. Only I am to warne the of one thing—wherin thou canst not note me of any mislike by justice, because the integritie and vertue of my intent defends me from imputacion that waye,—and which, also, I give the absolute assurance to performe—that is, being once discharged of thy authoritie, thou shalt use no more power to restraine me from doinge the thing which my minde hath alredd decreed; protesting unto the by the right hande of hym that governeth the universal globe, that, as no man shal touch Angeliqua but in sorte and order of mariage, so, if I be committed to a further force, thou and al the worlde shal perceive that I have a hart wil enharden thies handes to make a sacrifice of my life to the chastetie of those noble ladyes, whiche heretofore have rather desyred to dye then live with a note of infamie or dishonour. For as my soule shal never stande in hazarde of grace by the villainy of any acte which my bodye shal commit by free consent, even so if this carkasse be forced to violacion, I doubt not but the integritie of my minde wil purchase a priviledg againste all purgatorie of my soule, witnessing in the other worlde myne innocencie and invincible hart.' Wherewith, she renewed the alaram of her sorowe with a fresh supplie of sodaine teares; with suche abundaunce and impetuositie of dule, that a man woulde have thoughte that the whole humour and moyste partes of her braine had bene drained and dried by the surges of continuall teares which ceased not to fal from her waterie eyes. Her brother, for his part, albeit he greved with the desolation of his chaste syster, yet the joye he conceived in her present consent to his demaunde toke awaye the passion of that sorowe, felynge (as it were) some secrete instincte or forewarnyng of the happie successe and effect of the liberal offer of Angeliqua; to whom he excused his importunitie in

DISCOURSE

I

Angeliqua consenteth to her brother's request.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE some sorte after this manner:—‘I was never so gredie of
I life,’ saith he, ‘but I coulde be content rather to renounce
nature and dye then to sollicite the in any respect whiche
mighte bringe thy honor or reputacion in peril of infamous
interest; neyther would I lyve to se, and muche lesse be par-
taker of, the thinge that anye waye seames to tourne thee to
displeasure: whiche thou shouldest alwayes have founde by
effecte and touche of finger, if this liberall curtesye of our
enemye had not procured me to wrest the to that which
honestie denieth the to graunte, and I unhable to demaunde
without great wronge to thy vertue and no lesse prejudice
to mine owne honor. And, as the feare I have to be noted
of ingratitude hath taken away al respects of honor or
honestie to us both, so the vertue and noble hart of Anseamo
doth not only offer an assured argument of hope, but also
presentes absolute cause of firme belefe, that the only dis-
pleasure thou shalte finde in this enterprise will appeare
when thou art firste presented unto him. For it is not
possible he shold use villany on the behalfe of her, the
onely regarde of whose love hath made him make no con-
science to hazarde the displeasure of his parentes and chief
frendes; not refusing withall (without sute or importunitie)
to delyver him whom he hated, and had power to put to
what vengeaunce he wold.’ Here may be noted th’operacion
of two extremities of several dispositions, natural zeale and
fraternal dutie quarellinge wyth womanly shame, and raison
mentaining contencion within herselfe. Angeliqua knewe
and confessed that her brother dyd no more than he oughte,
and that she was also leviabie to the same bond and obliga-
tion of dutie; and, on the other part, th’estimation of her
honor, with regard to defende her chastetie, supplanted
such dutifull respectes of nature, and forced her to an
integritie of judgement in that which she accompted both
unjust and unlawful. Wherupon, resolving to observe both
the one and the other, and seame chiefly to be thankful to
the demaunde of her brother, determined to discharge him of
the debte towardes his long enemy and late frend; with
intent, notwithstanding, rather to die by the stroake of her
owne handes then villanously to loose the flower of that

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

which made her lyve famous and of greater renowme then the moste part of the ladies of that citie. DISCOURSE
I

But the vertue of this Salymbino is of more rare singulartie, and deserveth a greater commendacion, then the continencie of Cyrus, sometime King of Persia; who, fering a force of intyement to lorke under the flattering beautie of the faire and common Pantea, wold never suffer her to be brought to his presence, leaste her wanton regardes shoulde make him abuse the renowme of his auncient honor and brake the sacred devotion which all men ought to use in mariage, with violacion of his faith confirmed by former vowe to his wyfe: for Anseamo, enjoyng the presence with free commandement over her whom he loved no lesse then his owne life, did not only abstaine to abuse the bountiful gifte of his fortune, but also declared an effect of more nobilitie and vertue of mind then the saied Cyrus; as you may note in the next acte of this historie attending his present discoverie. For, as the Montanyn and his sister had devided their deliberation into certaine points, with abrigement at laste of their longe discourse, and that the faire Angeliqua had staid the source of her teares, with expectation of the ende of that which they had but nowe begon, Anseamo repaires from the contrey to his pallais in the towne. Wherof, at viij of the cloke in the evening, Don Charles received advertisement, and without delaye of further time willed his sister to attire herselfe in the best order she could. With whom, and onely one man (to cary a lanterne of slender lighte), they went to the lodging of Salymbino, whose servant by chance encountred them at the pallais gate of his maister, not without astonishment to see them there with desier to speake with Seigneur Salymbyno: who, understanding what companie the Montanyn brought with hym, was not forgetful for his part to discende with expedicion, having caried afore him ij staff torches geving light, til he came even to the gate; where, omittinge no kinde of curtesye in receaving the brother, he was barred (as it seamed) to expose any shew of service on the behalfe of her whom he chiefly desiered to honor; but, standing (as it were a man enchanted, or some hermit in expectation to heare the aunswere of his

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE oracle) was no lesse astonied with the viewe of his newe
I gesses then if he had sodainly dropped out of the cloudes.
Which confusion and trouble of mind was immediatly
espyed of Don Charles; who as he imagined, without great
studie, that the presence and beautie of his sister sturred up
the perplexitie of Salymbyno, so he went about to breake
the amaze with theis wordes:—‘Syr,’ saith he, ‘we have
cause of special conference with you, whiche requireth
neyther publike audience nor other witnes then our selves.’
Wherewith he offred them his chamber, and became their
guide thither with more shew of dutie then desiere to be
intreated; and leading his deare Angeliqua by the hande,
passed thorowe the hal into a certaine gallerie, furnished
with riches, and accotremetes belonginge to the greatnes
of his estate; where, beinge set in rich chaires and seates of
honor, and the place voyde of all companie, savyng the
presence of the ij simple clyentes and mercifull judge, Don
Charles Montanyno rise from his place and spake to th’other
in this sorte:—‘Albeit the offers of servitude be alwayes
moste hatefull to freemen, and that the noble hart can
hardly brooke to strike sayle for any somnance of adversitie,
yet the bonde of a good tourne, or benefyt alreedy don,
levieth such alarums of remoree to the mynde environned
with vertue, that she forceth not only an equall considera-
cion and recompense, but also claymeth a continuall remem-
braunce and thankeful recordacion in him who was firste
partaker of the benefyt. Wherin as I fynde my selfe speci-
ally touched, above all that ever was blessed with frendship
not looked for in this world, so, Seigneur Salymbyno, I
hope you wil excuse me, yf, in the firste place of my cata-
logue of thankesgeving, I honor you (contrary to the lawes
and customes of our common welth) with the title of Lorde
and Maister; seinge the vertue of your selfe, declared in the
greatest distresse that ever hath or coulde happen unto me,
doth not only yelde you by justice such title, but also chal-
lengeth at my hande a bonde of no lesse dutifull and con-
tinuall service towardses you, then you expect of the moste
drudge and slave that foloweth your traine. For what
disposition is more detestable then the note of unthanke-

Montanyno
to Seigneur
Salymbyno.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

fulnes; or wherein are we bounde to so franke and prodigal
an exposition of ourselves, and all that we have, as in the
remuneracion and retourne of the pleasures we have received
by straungers? Whiche I coulde enlarge with credible autho-
rities of elder dayes, and confirme by familiar experience of
our age, savinge that, in supplienge the tyme with repeticion
of antiquities, I should defer yet longer the doinge of that
whiche I chieflye desyer to performe. But, grevinge above
all thinges, that in the viewe and remembrance of their
vertues I fynde myselfe farre unhable to be equall or excede
anye that ever were renowned or noted to be thankfull,
(wherein, albeit I have juste cause to crye out of the malice
of my fortune; not for bringinge me so depely in your debt
—whiche I thinke was wrought by general consent of the
heavens—but for that she hath lent me such slender choice
of meanes to requite so greate a curtesye) yet, in appealinge
to the vertue of your mynde, I doubte not to make you
understande the greatnes of my desyer, and whether ingrati-
tude bee anye waye harbored in the harte of this poore
gentleman; who, havinge but himselfe and the chaste will of
his syster (being both preserved in entier by the onlye assist-
ance of your favor), makes heare a presente of ourselves and
al that belongeth unto us, with commission (sir) to dispose of
our lyves, lyvings, and honour, in any respecte it shall lyke
you to ymploye them. And because I am more than halfe
perswaded that th'only respecte of Angeliqua hathe kindled
the first coales of your desyer, causing a conversion of the
hate whiche discended unto you by inheritance, into a dis-
position to love that whiche your predecessors dispised
mortallie; and, for that, by the heavey clogge of our
extreme miserie, and harde condicion of state, wee are not
hable to shonne the name of unthankful, but by th'assist-
ance of her that first procured the debt; she, I saye, who
forced your liberalitie on my behalfe is heare, a readye
pawne for the satisfaction of that whiche I confesse to owe
unto you. It is (syr) my syster whom you see afore you;
who, to absolve the bonde of us bothe, dothe yelde herselfe
unto you with fre submission of her honoure and lyfe at
your pleasure. And I, beinge her brother, having her ful

DISCOURSE

I

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE and free consente in my power, do make you a presente of
I her, bequeathing you no lesse propertie then eyther I or she hath of herselfe, with authorytye to dispose of her as you thinke good; dowtinge not but you wil accepte the offer, and respecte the gyfte, accordinge to the value, with remembrance from whence it came, and in what sorte it ought to be used.' Wherwyth, not taryenge the replie of the other, nor to bid his syster farewell, he flonge downe the steares and went ymedyatlye to his owne house. If Anseamo were indyffrently amased at the firste arryval of both the Montanyns, or astonnyed with the oracion of her brother, it is nowe that he is double perplexed, both with the soddayn departure of Don Charles, and also to see in his presence the effecte of the thinge hee only desyred, and never was hable to ymagyn, and muche lesse durste enter into hope to have it come to passe. Wherein, as hee was no lesse gladd then he had cause, beinge in the free contemplation and companye of her whose bewtie and vertue hee accompted above the respecte of all commodities and pleasures of the worlde, so he labored of semblable dollor on the behalfe of the passion and secrete sorowe of mynde whiche he noted in her touching her presente change of estate; the same forcinge him also to a firme perswacion that th' accidente paste proceded rather of the generosytie, or to muche shew of corage and vertue, in the harte of the yonge man, then by consente, or any contentement at all, to the faire Angeliqua: whome, at the same instante hee toke betwen his armes, and, prof-fringe certeine chaste kysses, dryed her watrye eyes of teares, whiche ceased not to droppe with greate abundance, preferringe unto her this kinde of short consolacion:—'Yf ever I felte, or desyred to understande, with what wynged flye the unconstante goddess, whiche the poetes tearme the change and varyetic of the affaires of the worlde, it is nowe (good madam) that I am presented wyth suche a manifest and strange prooffe, that I dare skarcely beleve that whiche I see in offer afore myne eyes. For if the only respecte of you, and service whiche my harte hathe vowed and sworne unto you, hath constrained me to dissolve the bonde of extreame hate, which, by request of my parentes, I have

Fortune (accordinge to the poetes) is the change and alteration of the worldly affayres.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

bene enjoyed to beare to you and youre house; and, in that devocion, have delyvered your brother, as you knowe, from deathe; I see fortune denieth me the tryumphe of the victorye, for that your brother hath surmounted me in honour and vertue. And nowe do I see that, as the flatteringe gle of an uncerteine fortune oughte not to alter the goodnes of the disposition, so adversitie is not hable to corrupte the vertue of the noble mynde; nor, when the good torne is done, the memorye of the benefytt is not hatefull to the thankfull man. For, albeit my example deserveth commendacion, for that I opened the waye and became (as it were) youre brothers guide, gevinge the first earnest penny of humanitie betwene us, yet his ymytacion seames meritorious of treble praise; for that he hath not onely acknowledged my curtesye and returned it with doble interest, but also laboured to excede me in the true effectes of sincere nobylitie. Wherein, for your parte, beinge my vassal, by your owne consente and special gyfte of your brother, albeit you have more reason of doubt thenne cause to re-
appose assuraunce in my fydelytie, for that our newe reconcilment is not yet confirmed with any continuance of longe time, nor our amytye justefied but by one simple profe or experience of late, yet shal your selfe be judge, and the whole worlde wisse with you, that my hart is no lesse free from corruption then farre from dishonest or evil intent on your behalfe; and that I pursewe but a consomation of that which God hath geven as a dyvine sacrament and holy law amongst us. Wherefore, saith he, (with a fresh charg of honest kysses) 'do away, good ladye, your teares of present dule, and dispaire no more of the perfecte loialtie of your servaunte; who will deale no worse with you, havinge you in his power, then at suche time as he languished on your behalfe, and durst not discover the desyer he had to do you service. Neither shal your brother repent him of his curtesie, nor you in consentinge to obey him. For, albeit you are mine by peculiar graunt and mutual accord, and that your fortune hath geven me such scoape of authoritie over you that your honor waigheth only in the ballance of my disposition, yet the respecte of myne owne reputacion, and honour

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE that I owe to youre vertue, dothe defend you from other injurye at my hande then in making you the only maistrys of my hart, to crave your consent in lawfull mariage and societie of wedlocke: whereby th' aunciente mutynies and civill grudges shall not only retire and receive ende, but oure howses, rejoyned eftsones with this indissoluble bonde of affynitye betwene us, shal lyve hereafter in contynuall quiet, enjoyenge a mutuall amytye, more firme and stronge on both partes then the former quarrells were fatal or ful of mortalitye.'

I

These newes, stayinge the course of wonted teares, and dismissinge withal al dollorous argumentes or regards of sorowe, sturred uppe suche a complexion or dye of natural white and redde in the face of the faire Syennoyse, that she seamed rather a goddes syttinge in her glistering troane then an ympe or creature of nature; forcinge suche a vehemencie of desyer in the harte of Salymbyno, that he was dryven eftsones to geve a second charg of her goodwil, with a franke offer to make participation unto her of halfe his livinge and richesse. Wherewyth shee presented hym semelye reverence with a majestye of modestie and womanly behaviour, retorninge his request with thanks due to his liberal offer, with further assurance for her part to omit neyther indevor, nor diligence, nor declaration of dutie, on the behalfe of hym whom God hathe reserved for her laweful husbände and companion of bedde. Wherewith, after they had spent some litle momente in embrasinge one an other, and certein kysses given and received reciprocallye betwene theim, Anseamo knocked for an olde awnte of his, lyenge in his house, to whose charge and fydelytie he commytted the glorye of his newe conqueste. And, fyndinge the leaste momente of delaye greatly hurteful to his desyer, dispatched ymediatlye several messengers to his deare and nearest parentes and frendes; who, obeyinge the expedition of his short sommance, came ymediatlye unto his house, where he requested their assistance of advise and companye in the consommacion of a busynes of great importance. Wherein, if they appered willinge, or liked of his request, he seamed (I am sewer) to use above an ordinarie seleritic in the execution of his enter-

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

prise. And sending for his awnte, with her new charge and his deare Angeliqua, repaired immediatly (not without the greate amaze of his frendes) to the pallaies of the Montanin ; where, skarcely givinge leave to the interteynementes and proffers of court wherwith Don Charles saluted hym and his companye, he recited to his newe brother in lawe, in the hearinge of the rest, that as, not longe since, he, with his syster, came to his lodgings with request to communicate with him in secrete, so, for his parte, he is nowe there afore hym to reveale suche thinges as he hadd determined since his departure, and that in the publike audience and witnes of that companie ; whiche he hadd assembled of purpose, and to whom, with al the worlde, he intended to imparte his rare honestie and vertue, with suche revenge as himselfe mente to take upon them as seamed to honoure him with the offer of any pleasure or surmounte him in the gifte of thankefull dealyng. Whiche wordes seamed to ende as the whole companye was set in order with expectacion to see th'effecte of this misterie. And beinge all in scilence he torted his face with an oracion to the multitude in these tearmes :—‘ Me thinkes I see you all in a wonderfull amaze, with severall ymaginacion of my entente in procuringe this assemblie at so inconveniente an hower and in suche a place ; where none of you all (my kinsmen and frendes) nor my selfe hetherunto, have sette foote to enter, without desier to endamage or do some notable harme to the reste of theym that remaine of the Montanyn Lyne. Whiche astonismente, I shall also suspende in you till the ende of this shorte preamble, which I have preferred for the better understandinge of the parte I meane to playe. And if you will consider with regarde of indifferente judgement, and waighe in equal ballance the thinge whiche is called good, in the hartes of suche as, differryng from the brutall sorte, do followe the parte of raison properly called spiritual, you shall see, by that meane, that the generosytie and highe harte, grafted in us by our greate mystres and firste mother dame nature, doth never cease to make shewe of severall effectes, sometyme bringinge furthe one vertue, sometime makinge declaration of an other ; whiche, also, do preferre

DISCOURSE

I

Salymbyn to
his frendes
for the mar-
riage of
Angeliqua.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE their sondrye frutes, accordynge to the excellencie of the noble
I sprynge and fyrste source of the same. Wherein, also, this
nobylitie of minde hath such a force and speciall priviledge
by her fyrste founder, that, albeit all humaine thinges are
framed of a mettall of instabilitie subjecte to chaunge, yet
is she only founde firme and voide of all revolucion. And
though she bee one chief but and marke whereat Dame
Fortune doth loase her inconstante arrowes, shakynge her
persynge dartes againste her on all sydes, yet is shee founde
soo invincible againste her assaults that shee is as voyde of
power to move her as the blustryng windes, forcynge an
incredible furye to the angrye disposition of the sea, seame
unhable to sturte the harde rocke or stoney mountayne.
Where uppon it followeth, that as the greatnes of fortune
wyth glee of infynite riches doo lifte uppe, and make swell,
the harte of a villaine or one of base condicion; so the syni-
ster chaunge of estate, nor anye malyce or ministers of
povertie, can embase or make stowpe the greatnes of corage
in them that are wroughte in a contrary frame, or made of
other stufte then the vulgare sorte: for they kepe alwaies
a majestie of theyr originall, and observe in suche sorte
th'instincte of the bloode whercof theyr auncestors were
made noble, and gave theym sucke of the veray milke of
vertue, that, what dispites or malicious somonce soever for-
tune doth sende them, the temperat argument of modestie
in their complexion and countenaunce, wyth true effect and
operation of true vertue of their mind, do sufficiently argue
their condicion in defyinge the threates of the worlde, and
makes absolute declaracion that, under the vaile of suche
miserie, is shrowded a harte deservinge better allowance
then the adversatie whiche tormentes theym. Herein con-
sistes the whole glorie of the youthe of the Persians and
Meades, who, albeit were norished and broughte uppe
amongeste the heardmenne of their parentes, yet gave they
place to no contrey in magnanymytie of mynde. And who
hath exceded, or bene equall, in generosytie or noble corage
of harte to Romulus, the firste founder of the prowde cytie
of Rome? Yet was hee assisted with no better educacion
or traynyng uppe thenne in caves and cabynettes of shep-

Vertue firme
and not sub-
ject to change.

The noble
mynde invinc-
ible agaynst
fortune.

King Cyrus
norished and
brought up
in the
contreye.

Romulus
brought up
amonge
shepherdes.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

herdes, and suche as inhabyte the playne and deserte fieldes for the garde of their cattell. All whyche I have preferred unto you (my Lords and Ladyes) as a special preprative to the peculiar praise and commendacion of the undowted noblenes of mynde of Signeur Charles Montanyn and his syster, who, wythoute prejudice or wronge to anye, maye well be tearmed the peragon for bewtie, and mirroer of honeste and chaste behavioure, above all the ladies aund gentlewomen in oure common wealthe. Whose house, as you knowe, hath bene so oppressed wythe contynual persecucion, that onely they two are the laste remeyndoures of their whole race, standinge, also, not longe since at the point of extreme ruyne and utter subversion for ever. Yet the ymposition of suche straunge miseryes colde neyther move any dymnition of corage, nor staye of desyer, to expose an effecte of that vertue and bowntie whyche nature hath appointed to occupie the hartes of theym that bee true noble. Wherein as I see some justice to exclaime againste the crueltie of our auncestors, for that the only respecte of a smal broyle, happeninge by chaunce, hath moved them to thonder a most mortal vengance of this so auncient and vertuous a stocke; so, for my part, being pryvie to mine own conscience, (with remembrance of the wise admonicion of the grave philosopher, saying, that as of unlawfull winninge of the father comes just losse to the sonne, soo hee that makes himselfe a tyrante by force becomes oftentimes a slave by justice) I thinke it necessarye, not onely to blowe the laste retraite of all grudge betwene us, but also worke the effecte and confirmation of a future amytye for ever hereafter. And if the view of th'auncient quarrels and mutunies of former time do staye your consente to presente compassion of their case, yet let not the honest trade of lyfe, civill behaviour, and modest disposition, of this brother and syster, depart without the due mede and hyer of their vertue; neyther let us suffer their place in the senate to bee emptie or voyde of supplie, that earste hath bene furnished with the presence of the moste noble and wise men of our cytie; to th'ende that our example may serve as a precedent to the future tyme, in that th'onely

DISCOURSE
I

Of unlawfull
winning of
the father
comes just
losse to the
sonne.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE

I

The Romains
respected
more the
vertuous
povertie, then
allowed the
rich man con-
verted into
vice.

respecte of vertue, and not ryches, makes us restore the decayed stockes of our common wealthe. Wherein, also, we shall justelye deserve the title of our highe discente from the puissant and mightie emprours of Rome; who gave ever more honour to the vertuous povertie, then regarde or commendacion to the richeman converted into vice or abhominable indevours. But nowe, because I see you alredie forewearyed with the lengthe of a lingrynge suspence, desyerynge to knowe the cause of thys greate commendacion of the Montanyns, with request to abridge my tedious discourse, if you will lende me a litle liberty to speake, with patience to heare the chiefe poyntes of my protestation, the spedie ende of my tale shal restore present quiet and contentment to your trobled myndes. It is longe since, I muste confesse, (and yet th'offence is neyther mortal nor falte so hainous but it may be forgiven) that the beauty, with other parts of perfection, in the faire Angeliqua here presente, so ravished my senses and robbed me of my libertie at one instante, that th'only exercise whych occupied my head daye and nighte for a longe tyme, was the sondrye devyses I ymagyned to discover unto her my martiredome. Wherin, I fedd the hongry humor of my affection with such alarams and contraryetie of conceites, that havinge by thys meane loste the necessary appetite of the stomake and usual desyer of sleepe, I felte suche a diminucion of nature and lyvelye force thorowe all the partes in me, that I was presented at one tyme wyth the choice of two moste perillous evils in the worlde; the one to dye afore my tyme by suffocation of pynnyng dollour, or els to yelde to a deprivation of my senses and gyfte of understandinge for ever. Wherein I was also pursued wyth the readye assistaunce of perplexed dispaire, for that I saw no meane to make that seame easye wherein I judged so greate an impossibilitye, chieflye by the grounded quarels of our ii houses. Whereby, albeit, the warre seanes ended, and the grudge halfe appaised betwene us, yet was I of opinyon that there remeined an equall desyer in the hartes of us both neyther to wishe well the one to the other, and muche lesse to absteine from further slaughter when soever a newe occa-

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

sion shoulde eftesones fall oute. Neyther could theis mortall impedimentes argue sufficient raison to deminish min affection, but sturred uppe rather a treble increase of desyer, accordynge to the passioned minde enchanted with love; who makes suche as he possesseth more apte to desyer, then hable to attayne to the effect of that whiche they wishe, preferring alwayes a simple likelihode in that wherin appereth an absolute impossibilitye, to th'ende to afflicte theyr miserable lyves wyth continuall annoy. But as theis extremeties had filled my head full of dispaire, and committed me to a continuall carefulnes of minde—because I could neither stave the course of my affection, nor encounter the object of my desyer—beholde! fortune entred into compassion of my state, assistynge me wyth so readye a medecine for my greate disease, that, when I was voyde of all expectation or hope of recoverye, I was presented with a franke offer of my desyered praye. For as it is not unknowen to you all, that, sence the departure of viij or ten dayes, the Lord Montanyn here present, beinge accused afore the Senate uppon certeine peynall statutes devised by our cruell state for the rappeale of banished men, was awarded by judiciall sentence to paye the forfaiture; whiche because he could not tender within the tyme, his greedie enemies forced the law to a more rigour then was necessarie, in suche sort as th'executioner was redde to extende upon his bodie, for want of a supplye of a thosande florents to choake the covetous humour of the magistrates: even so the view of his extremitie sturred up such a remorce in my mynde, that me thought I was sommoned by dutie to prevent the destruction of him who was brother, and th'only comfort, of her whom I had alredye proclaimed the soveraigne ladye and mystres of my hart. In whiche good vaine of devocion, I payd the money and procured his delyverye; who (for his parte) devynge, I can not tell upon what occasion, that the beautie of his sister did worke th'effect of suche a vertue in me, hath not onely been thankefull for the benefit, but also overcome me in honeste liberalitie and true noblenes of mynde, presenting me in the begynnyng of this eveninge, at myne owne howse, with a

DISCOURSE
I

Love make
us more apte
to desier then
hable to
attaine.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE prodigal offer, not onely of hymself and al that he hath, but
I also of his syster, whom he lefte with me to use and dispose
at my pleasure. Wherein, for ende, I appeale to you all
with one requeste, that, in waighinge rightly the gyft of the
one and offer of the other, you will consider of them both,
and assiste me immediatly wyth your advise in what sorte I
may yelde a due meede to suche ij precious merites the one
a most familiar patterne and precedent of true nobilitie, and
the other a present of suche price and value that the
greatest prince in Italy coule do no wronge to his greatnes
in yeldynge honor and homage to so rare a thinge.' Wher-
upon he stayed his further discourse, gyvinge place to
th'assistantes for consultacion of the case; whiche, albeit
they knewe imported deliberat advise afore the resolution of
judgement, yet were they in amaze what sentence to gyve;
because they were neither privie nor partakers of the deter-
minacion of hym who had sommoned their apparance there
rather to witnes the fact then decide the case, or impeshe
his resolute intent by a contrarye councill. The ladies, his
kynswomen, were so moved to admiracion wyth the majestie,
and other argumentes of vertue, in the faire Angeliqua, that
they had passed judgement on her syde; yf they had not
feared to be refused of hym who wished their voice that
waye, and who onely beinge touched above the rest most
neare the quicke, dismissed their astonishment in reveilyng
his owne determination in this sorte:—'Seinge you take so
greate a tyme to discusse so small a matter, with no lesse
doubte to publishe sentence of that whiche is alredeye deter-
mined, let me abridge all arguments of further delaye, in
deciphering in playne wordes the thinge whiche hetherunto
I have communicated but by circumstance. You shall
understand, sayth he, (in takinge Angeliqua by the hande)
that havinge the regarde of honor afore myne eyes, with
desyer to recompence at full the honestie and vertue of the
brother, I am resolved to take the, syster, to my deare and
lawfull wyfe (preferrynge by that meanes a perfect unitye of
that whiche longe tyme hath lyved in separacion) and make
of two bodyes, earste and longe disjoyned, an equall wyll and
entyer mynde; desyerynge all your consentes in the consom-

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

mation of this alliance, whiche seameth rather the worke of God then an effect of the councell or diligence of man. For the lawe of mariage, beyng an institution of the highest, and the thing wherin Christ firste glorified himself by miracle upon earth, is recorded in th' infallible booke of his foreknowledge, to th' ende nothyng chaunce whiche is not permitted and forseene by the providence of the God of marvels; who sewerlye layed his hande upon the, brother Montanyn, in touching the with distresse and perill of lyfe, to th' ende that my Angeliqua, being the onely meane of thy delyverye, might also laye an immovable fondacion of a mutuall unitie betwene our two houses; whiche, I hope, shall survive the length of tyme, and not ende but wyth the laste remainder of eyther of our posterityes.' This conclusion, thus hearde of the parentes and kynsfolkes of Salymbyno, and canvaied a litle in their severall opinions, seamed at laste of such reason and indifferencie to them all, that they converted their conceites, whiche kepte them occupyed for a tyme, into a present disposition of wonderfull joye and gladnes; feelyng in theyr intrals and inward partes (I can not tell by what secret instinct of minde) an approche of indissoluble tranquillitie on all partes, by the only conjunction of this newe allyance. And albeit there was no equalitye of porcion, and that the dowere of Angeliqua stooode aloff from the revenues of her newe consort, yet the vertue and giftes of grace appearyng in her made her seame hable to countervaile hym in any respect; and his frendes with one voice gave generall commendacion to the goodnes of his fortune, for plantyng his affection in so vertuous a soyle. Wherein, sewerly, they had good reason. For mariage, being a law and holye Sacrament given us from God as th' only knott of mutuall tranquillitie betwene man and woman, oughte to be embrased for the vertue and sinceritie of the thyng, and not abused with a regarde of richesse or other fylthye promociions of the worlde. And he that in the choice of his wyfe respectes chiefflye her beautie and greatnes of porcion (besides a thousand pette mutinyes that fall out in housekeping) escapeth seldom without a sprit of grudge or cyvill discension disturbyng hys quiet, wyth a continuall

DISCOURSE

I

Mariage the first thing wherin Christ glorified himself by miracle.

In the choice of our wife wee ought to respect the vertue and gyftes of the mind, and not the riches or exterior beautye.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE I humour of frettyng disposition feedyng hys mynde. For the glasse of beautie retireth and gyveth place to age, whiche also mortifyeth the delite or desyer of further pleasure; and, on th'other syde, the woman, knowyng her discent more noble, and porcion to excede the welthe of her husbnde, forgetteth not to take hart at grasse, and, deckyng her garlande wyth all sortes of flowers of pryde and disdayne, seekes to governe and gett the upper hande of hym, who, as he is appointed her heade by the woordes of Scripture and institution of nature, so he oughte to kepe a straitte hande of the same bridle and raine of authoritie, usinge it as a chck to restraine the desyer of libertie in her that studieth to have hym in subjection. Wherein, I wishe all bachilors and younge men unmarried to be armed againste so greate a mischief with the experience of suche theyr frendes as they see touched with the like grieffe. And for my parte, I lament the disquiet of them as woulde and can not, or rather dare not, attempte a simple reformation in them who are borne to beare the yoke of awe and commandement of their husbndes. Retournyng, therewyth, to the sequeile of Salymbyno, who, workyng the laste effecte and consummation of his curtesye, gave the one halfe of his goodes of all sortes in favour of the mariage, adopting at th' instant the Montanyn as his brother in lawe and assured frende, with generall substitution to all his goodes, if he chaunced to dye without heire of his bodye, and havng children, he conveighed unto hym, by suche assuraunce in revercion as the lawe coulde devise, that moytie whiche he gave in dowerye to his faire Angeliqua; whom, the Sondag folowyng, he married, with pompe due to both their estates, to the universall contentement of his frendes, and speciall quiet of the Citty, who had endured longe affliction by the mortalitie and civill warre of theis ij houses. Suche be the varieties happenyng in the successe of our worldly affaires. Wherein, who wil denye but that adversitie sometime is necessarie for men? Seinge she doth not only force a wonderfull remorce and reformation of lyfe, but also workes often tymes an effecte of that wherein appeared an absolute impossibilitie of conquest by any other meane. And truly the vertue of

Adversitie is necessary for that it makes us perfect.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

this example discredits utterly the commendacion of the auncient Romaines; amongeste whome, as there chaunced diverse tymes greate enimyities and grudge of mynde, so there folowed a spedie reconcilment, albeit, not by suche meanes as this franke attonement betwene the Salymbyns and Montanyns; but some were reclaymed by the offer of promociion, some solicited by the voice of the whole common welth and confirmed by the present gyfte of some notable office, and other with a regard to peculyar proffit; not one of them all approchyng neare the magnanimitie in the worste of these three.

Whereof the one, sommoned by a passion of love, seamed to excede nature in perfourmyng an exploit not hable anye waye els to be wrought to effect. And yet there be that, cryenge out againste love, paintes hym in cullors of rage, follye, and frenzye. But suche are rather abused wyth theyr owne conceites, then hable to consider ryghtelye the vertue of that impression. For love, in the noble harte, is no other thing then the true subjecte of curtesye, the fountaine from whence distilleth the originall of all cyvill and good order, the onelye meane that moves us to moderacion when we are inclined to crueltie or revenge, and the chiefest norse and preserver of peace amongest men. Wherein, yf some vile disposition happen to violat or pervert the lawes of so necessarie and auncient institution of nature, the vertue and subject itselke, yet, oughte not bee touched wyth the cause of suche faulte, nor deserve to be noted of any corruption; seinge suche derogation procedes by the abuse of hym that knoweth not the perfection of the thyng. Which falles out also in experience in diverse other accidentes; who, beinge vertues of them selves, do loase theyr credit by the malice of suche as abuse them vyllanouslye. Wherupon the good thyng is often condemned by the folly of suche as are ignoraunt in the perfection of the same.

In the other appears a rare disposition of a bountifull mind so farre from the abhominable spot of ingratitude, that his lyfe was ready to bee offred for the satisfaction and discharge of the curtesie, if the other had required it. Wherein, as you maye see greate effectes of true magnany-

DISCOURSE

I

The vertues
in love in a
noble minde.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE I mitye, and wherein a noble mynde oughte not to bee overcome with the vertue of honeste curtesye, so, touchyng the price of victorye (I meane, whiche of the three is moste meritorious of commendacion, and deserveth to weare the garland) I referre the judgement to th'indifferencie of suche as, wythout passion or parcialitye, do use to note the chaunces happenynge to men.

You see a mortall enemye sorowed for the miserie of his adversarie, but solycited thereunto (you will saye) by the inevitable force of love, whiche also wroughte his delyverye. The other marched wyth the glorye of a present so rare that the greatest Monarcke of the worlde maye be astonyed with the remembrance of his prodigall bountie. The wonderful zeale and affection of the syster towards her brother chalengeth no lesse praise then the reste: who, albeyt she had seene a proof of the curtesye of her enemye, yet had she no assurance of his modestie: notwithstandinge, to discharge everye waye her dutye towards her brother, she layde her virginitye uppon the blocke of vyolacion.

The firste claymeth to be victor, because his laste vertue in the mariage excedes his former curtesie; but he hath overthrowen his enemye and not won the feelde, so that he is not to enjoye the praise or price of the victorye. The absolute resolution of the younge ladye to kyll herselfe, yf she were forced to dishonour againste her wyll, takes awaye all glorye and commendacion from her, yf the care to kepe honor and virginitye dyd not prevaile above the preservation of lyfe. The brother, and thirde of this crew, albeyt this prodigall offer proceded by compulcion of the former bountye of hys frende, yet the noblenes of hys mynde was equall to the reste, and hys vertue nothyng inferiour to eyther of the other twoo. And yet, yf it were not the singuler respecte he had to retourne hys benefytt wyth the double interest, wyth care to bee more then sufficiently thankfull to his patrone, I coulde diminishe his glorye.

Wherein, because the lamentable tragedye of twoo poore lovers sommones me to discover theyr misadventure, wyth no lesse reason to furnishe the stage with a declaracion of theyr loyaltye then your ladyship hath alreddie harde the

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

whole discourse of the rare vertues in Syenna, I leave suche DISCOURSE
gentlemen and skilful dames who take paine to skan this I
historye to argue the cause at large, and resolve judgement
at leasure, not doubtyng of your integritye in yeldyng
the true tytle of tryumphe and glorie to some one of the
three whome you accompte moste worthie to bee
crowned with the lawrel of victorye.

DISCOURSE

II

THE LONG and LOYALL LOVE betwene LYVVO
and CAMYLLA, together with their lamentable
death; the one dying of a passion of joye
the first night he embraced his mystres in
bedde; the other passed also the same way,
as overcome wyth present sorow for the
death of him whom she loved no
lesse then herselfe.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE II

THE ARGUMENT

THERE is nothinge, how good and profytable so ever it appeare, whereon attendethe not a discommoditye to hym that deales in it wythout discrecion, together with a parentorye displeasure in receiving it contrarye to the consent of good governement. Wherin I may be assisted with sufficient confirmation in a daylye experience of the ordynarye meates, brothes, and other confections, tollerated by phizicke for the sustentacion of man : whiche, albeit bee good of theimselfes, yet, being swallowed in glottonous sorte, they do not only procure a surfeyt with unsavery indigestion, but also, converting our auncient healthe and force of nature into humors of debylytie destillinge thorowe all the partes of the bodye, do corrupte the blodde which of itselfe afore was pure and without infection. Even suche is the disposition of love, whose effectes, directed by reason (which oughte to guide everie accion and doing of man) be not suche enemies indeede to the quiet of our lyfe, as necessary meanes to reforme the rudenes of our owne nature ; accordinge to the authoryte of the poet, affirminge that by love the rude man is reduced to a civilitie, the foole learneth wisdom, the cowarde becomes valiaunte, and the covetouse nigard settes his purse wyde open to hys frende ; neyther is there any kinde of curtesye wherwith hee that is in love doth not participat. But who makes an experience of the contrarye, I meane without advise or judgemente, will throwe himselfe hedlonge into the golphe of a folishe and conning phantasye, escapes hardly without the rewarde whiche that frantike passion yeldeth ordenarely to suche as are unhappelye partakers of suche infection. Neyther is there any thinge more furthereth the ruyn and dekaie of man, then sufferinge the eyes of our understandinge to be seeled withsuche vanitye as to ymitate that as a glot of our gredy desyers whiche nature hathe enjoyed to all estates to honour and embrace as a speciaall

Sondry
vertues in
love.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

II

vertue. And, truly, me thinks that that folishe and infortunat crewe mighte reserve th' errors and destructions of others as speciall pattornes and preceptes to restraine the humor of their owne madnes; by the whiche (or they be aware) they are led to the brinke of mortall destruction. Albeit, th' indiscretion of that miserable sorte seames nothinge unlike in comparaiso to those that, havinge longe used the trade of thefte and robberye, and seinge their companions passe by the sentence of a corde, lacke grace notwithstandinge to disclaime the wickednes wherin they have bene nozeled so many yeares: neyther is their plage (or rather juste punishmente) any thinge inferior; for they, makinge a chiefe glorye of that whiche is moste imperfecte in love, are eyther so subjecte to dispaire, or beastly assotted withe the greedye encownter of the pleasure they fynde, that, procurring by their owne folly and want of order the processe of their fatall sommaunce in the entrey to their felycitye, are forced to resigne, at one instante, their lyfe and loathing contentmente, of lesse contynuance then the paines in love seame grevous to the mynde that hath the gift to passe them over by reason. And like as a vehement and inwarde greffe of the mynd (proceeding by the malice of a synister fortune) is of such force to close the poares and conduictes of the vitall partes of man, that, cancelling the commission of lyfe, the soule departes leavinge the body without sence; like power, I saye, hath the vehemencie of semblable gladnes, whiche, occupieng all the partes with a generall joye (exceding the strength of nature) makes the mynde insufficient of force to withstande so greate a passion: whereby, strykinge the saile of lyfe, the bodye is seene to vanishe as the candle lackinge waxe, or weake, or other matter assistinge the flame whiche giveth lighte to the beholders. Whereof we have diverse authorityes in the histories of antiquitye; as one of the daughters in law to the high priest Helye, who, hearinge of the death of her husbande and the takinge of the arke of the lord, ended her lyfe with the dollorous reapport; the like happeninge unto her father in law, for the overthrowe of the children of Israell by the infydelles and uncircumcised. In like sorte we have confirmacion in diverse prophane discourses of such as have yelded the ghoste in a traunce of unreasonable joye and lawghinge; as Dyagore Rhodiotto, and the philosopher Chilon, who, upon the newes that their children had won the prise at the plaies at Olympus, embrased their happye fortune with such exceding gladnes, that, upon the place and present,

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE II they yelded againe their tearme of borrowed yeres. Also a folyshe Romaine woman, hearing of the death of her son in a battaile fought against th' ennemy, disgested it with great constancy, but seing his safe retorne from the field, contrary to her expectation and former newes, she was so assailed with superfluity of gladnes, that, in place to congratulate his deliuerye from the perill of war, she dyed in embrasing hym, as of a passion of dismeasured contentment. Which argueth sufficiently the folly of them that in any degre bestowe eyther joye or sorowe so neare their harte, that, besydes the destruction of the body, they become th' unnatural morderers of their owne soules. Wherin, with what enamel so ever they seke to guild and colour such vices, yet can they not be excused of an humor of madnes, proceeding of a vaine braine, exposing frutes according to the spirit or guide that possesseth them. Neyther is ther any commendacion at al due unto such as throwe ympacience give ende to their lyfe by dispaire, with what title or sorname of constancy the fond philosophers of olde time do baptyse those accions of meare fury and frenecy. Wherof, as the miscrable ende of these ii lovers yeldes sufficient testymonie, dieng both in one hower of diverse accidents, the one of a dismeasured joye the other of a passion of desperatte sorowe ; so, bicause the discourse is of undoubted truth, I wishe it might move credyt to the reader, and counsell to al men to eschew the like inconvenience deriuyd of semblable occasion.



AT such tyme as Alexander the sixt, sur-named Borgia, supplied the papistical seate at Rome, dwelt in Sysenna a yong gentleman called Lyvyo, with his syster Cornelia: neare unto whome was the house of a knight bering the name of Renaldo, having a son called Clawdio, with a daughter Camylla: which two yong dameselles, by reason of neighborehead, and contynuall norryture together duringe their infaney, retheyned a league of suche mutuall famylyaritie and conversacion, that their soeyetye, with often entercourse together, seamed no lesse

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

then if nature had made them the children of one father. Wherein, as Renaldo and his wife rejoyced not a litle on behalfe of their daughter, for that Cornelia was accompted to excede the rest of yonge ladies in honest behaviour and gyftes of vertue ; so, if it had not bene for a froward disposition in Clawdio (who grudged without cause the companie of Lyvyo), this conversacion and haunt of the girles had seamed of easier contynuance. Albeit as his presence often gave ympedimente to their metinge, so his absence restored their enterviewe ; in such sorte as he was no soner departed to parforme his fathers affaires at Rome, or els where, but hys syster forgat not to visit her deare Cornelia ; passing theyr pettie follies, and recreacions of honest delyte, most commonly at the lodginge of Lyvyo, for that there was neither awe of father nor other authoritie to controll their exercise : which, for the most part, was every afternone to dresse fyne banquettes, striving to excede one another in curiosyte and conning, with a thousande other conceytes and merye chat of huswiferie ; which seamed of no lesse pleasure to them then the pomppe of wanton delytes, wherewith princes and other great ladies are respected, served, and honored, and sometime courted, by a crew of veneryan and carpet knights, with divers ymportunyties and unseamely requests of love : who, as he is an humor of infection derived of the corrupt partes in our selves, and yet common to us all by nature, so is he chiefly furthered in th'execution of his evil by an usuall frequentacion and hawnte of parties. Whereof may bee noted a moste familiar experience in this Lyvio, who, during the practis of the two girles, toke such viewe of the bewtie and behaviour of Camilla (seing her only go and come to the chamber of his syster) that he began to sipp of the cuppe of affection, no lesse then Dido kyssing Cupido under the figure and semblance of the litle Ascanius, son to the valiant Eneas. Neyther could he be so constant to repulse this first apprehension ; but (maugre his hart) he yelded to the somonce of his affection, and, at the first assalt, surrendred the fortresse to him that offred the warr. Who, at the first entry, made himselfe lord over the free partes of this prisoner, and rampired himselfe so strongly

DISCOURSE

II

Love is an humor of infection derived of the corrupte partes in our selves.

Love.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE II within th'interiour of his mynd, that he was not onely in one instante the governour of his thoughtes, but also, directing his whole doings by the diall of his descretion, fedd hym onely wyth the unsaverye jewice of tormente and contynuall passion ; in suche sorte as, not knowinge whether hee shoulde encounter a retorne of recipocall glee, hee seamed to love uppon credytte, takinge pleasure in interteyninge his uncerteyne thoughts, and vaine delite of his flatterying fancy. Wherein, he had hadde some reason, if the conference of Camilla had kindled the coles of this affection in his mind (for that, as I have sayde, frequentacion bredeth first the desyer, so wordes have force to further th'effecte of diverse thynge whiche otherwaies we colde never bringe to passe) or if he had bene aunswerd with a *sympathia*, or equalitie of frendshipp, by her on whose behalfe he comytted such fond ydolatrie. But what ? when a man hath once set a broch the humor of his follie, he accomptes it a great symplicitie to desist afore he hath performed every effecte and suggestion of the blynde guide that governeth his unrulye wil. For this yonge pigeon of the first plume, hatching in the secret of his mind that whiche he durst not discover, toke singler pleasure in the repetycion of the delite which he desired ; ymaging that Camilla had cropped of the same herbe whereof hee had swallowed bothe the leafe and roote, and that shee was no lesse zelous on his behalfe, then he the slave forced and enchanted by the vertue of her glisteringe beawtie. Wherein, as deserte and solitarie soyles bee harbors moste convenyente for such as be occupied wyth passion, so hee beganne by lytle and litle to disclayne all compagne and places of assemblie, and accompted his greatest felycitie to discourse with his thoughtes in the open and barraine felde ; wher onely the ayre did witnes his dollor and the birdes partakers of hys hollowe sighes. Wherin, walking one day (amonge the rest) along a coppies, or grove of short wode, norished by the moisture of two or thre pleasante chanelles, distilling from certeyne rockes builded by nature upon the hight of the mounteynes, whych favoured his dolful complainte with an eecho of semblable dule, he exposed an effect of his passion in these sorowfull termes :—

Words have force to further the effecte of anye thinge.

Desert soyles be harbors mete for solitary persons.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

‘What angrye dome of the godds or sinyster permission of the fates is this’ (sayth he) ‘which, depriving my harte of his auntyente lybertie, hath made a transport of my thoughtes upon the ymage of a beawtie that resembleth the clearenes of the heavens, and eclipsethe what soever is perfecte or fayre uppon earthe? From whence procedes thys newe authoritye, whyche, commaunding the strongeste parte in me, seameth to force a desier to wishe that wherof myne eyes have alreadie given judgement touchinge the bewtye of th’ onely mistres of my thoughtes? What soddaine alteration is this to transforme my libertie into a servile thraldome, and yet of more delite and contentement then if I were pronounced th’ onely souveraine and lord of the whole patrymonie? Alas! I thinke th’ accidente, excedynge the compasse or computacion of nature, ympartes his power and title with the celestial authorityes above; for myne eyes do daylye fede upon the presence of Camylla and encountreth a contynuall viewe of her companye. But the true effecte of that whiche is perfecte, under the corporal vaile can not bee discerned but by figure and force of ymagynacion; the which, ravishinge my senses, hath made me the slave of her, who, livynge without subjection or touch of passion, may, peradventure, converte the symptomes of my presente greefe into a conceyte of litle or no regarde, wyth a disdayne of th’ offer of my affection. To what ende sholde I endeavor to gather the frute, when the leaves will graunte me no favour; or who will bende his devocion towards the shryne, if the sainte close the gates of compassion agaynste him? In like sorte, what pleasure have I to embrase a shadowe, when the bodye disdaineth my homage and offer of service; oneles there be a felycitie in the life of the Cameleon, livinge with the breath or ayre of the skies? For, in fearinge to discover my grefe, I have cause to dispaire of the remedie; and in fedinge onely uppon vaine and uncertaine ymaginacions, I am to expecte no other contentment but such as distilleth from the fountayne of such simple favours, that now I find theim the happiest kinde of creatures to whom nature hath ymparted such rude shappe and grosse understandynge, that they can not in any sorte receive th’ impressions of love;

DISCOURSE
II
The com-
plainte of
Lyvyo.

The Cameleon
is norished
by the breath
of the ayre.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE where we, alas! that are derived of a more delicate molde, and enjoyed to a generositie of spirite above the reste, are barred the benefyt of all felycitie, in admittinge as a principall pleasure the thing which tormentes us more mortallie then if we were persecuted with all th'afflictions of the worlde. Herein appeares the folye and wante of discretion in man, doatinge upon the vanities and passions whiche of hymself hee plantes in hymselfe, without foreseinge howe unhabable hee is to restore his quiete after hee bee once attainted with the humour of suche corruption. But what? may any one man be assisted with speciall privilege in that which nature hath made common to us all? I meane, is it in the power of any to procure dispence from the daunger of love, or staye the coles kindled in our intrailes to burst into blase or open flame? No! no! for a million that have fallen into the snares and perils of affection, I have not knowen anye one that hath disposed of hymselfe and thoughtes other wayes then accordynge to the discretion of hym that sekes to mortifye our quiet and triumphe in the servilitie of us wretches. Yet, for my parte, seinge there is no evill in embrasing things that be faire,—for that (according to th'oratour) the faire and good are so conjoynd together, that, the one glorifyenge in the other, are confirmed both with equal estimacion—why shoulde I not pursue the love of my deare Camilla; whose exterior regardes argew a greater vertue then to refuse the offer of my simple and honest service, supported with an intente of unfayned loyaltie so longe as nature shall assiste me with one moment of tyme in this worlde? But, alas! what reason hath she to graunte to that whiche I dare not demaunde; or howe shoulde she satisfye my requeste beinge altogether ignoraunte of my meaninge? And seyng by conceylinge my desyer, my greefe is growen to an agravacion of torment, why staye I to disclose the cause; to the ende I maye eyther receyve the soveraine *Cataplame* for my sore, or els the laste and fatall syroppe whiche maye sende me to complaine mine evill in the other worlde? Wherin, as he made here his plat to communicate his love with his mistres, so the veray presence of Camilla, and fear to offende her, toke

Cicero.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

away th' effect of that resolution, convertinge his complot into a misterie of some dreame or vision invisible. Whereby, what with the increase of his passion and feare to bewraye th' occasion, his greefe grewe to a disease, presentynge argumentes of debilitye and diminution of strength, with lose of auncient colour in his face; so far furth, that he seamed not the same Lyvio which earst was so welcome into all companies, no lesse for hys grace and perfection of nature then his guifte of pleasante discourse: seinge that, nowe, in so shorte a tyme, he is so transposed into the habite and disposition of a malencolike and solitarie harmit, that there appeared no lesse impossibilitie to have hym assiste any assemblye, accordynge to the commendable custome of nobilitie, or youth of gentle discente, thorowe all the franchises in Italy, then to mortifye in one instante the furye of his solitary passion; in suche sort that the young ladyes and gentlewomen, companyons to his syster, began to deskande of his coye and religious trade of lyfe. Some of them, accusinge hym of folishe disdain, noted a sorte of savage and hagarde disposition; and some, seinge as fare into his disease as the phizicion into his water, referred the cause of this soddaine chaunge to the mortall and inevitable woundes of the cruell son of the faire Cypris. Wherwith Cornelia, troubled withoute measure that the alteracion of her brother was the onely wonder of the multitude, grevyng no lesse, for her parte, then the rest seamed amazed, accoasted hym one mournyng in a close arbore or alleye of his gardin, where he was recording his amarous conceits, and disposed herselfe t'understande the cause under these termes:—
I hope sayeth she my present commyng (excedyng my ordinary custome) will not move you to conceytes of presumption against me; chiefly for that I desier to communicate with you in that which yourself ought to disclose to such as are deare unto you, to th' ende that, if the meane to restore you consiste in straungers, the remedie may folow with expedition. But if a sleight salve may cure a slender sore, and that your greefe is of no other consequence then a passion of ymaginations, why do you not take up the vaine that fedes the humour of such fonde conceites, and of yourselfe

DISCOURSE

II

Cornelya to
her brother.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE II
dismisſe the darke cloudes of your troubled fanſie? For, I assure you, the ſhame whiche I have on the behalfe of your doing is nothyng inferiour to the pangēs you feele; chiefly for that your ſolemne trade of life, ringing in mine eares by a general reaporthe of all men, makes me not only reſuſe diuerſe aſſemblies whiche I ought to viſite, but alſo loathe the companie of my deare companions, who forget not to reproche me with imputacion of our change; proteſting unto you, that, if you confirme it with any longer time, I wyl alſo aſſiſte your ſolitarie trade, and kepe my ſelfe ſo recluſe, that, in forbearing to viſite my frends abroad, I will alſo forbid th'acceſſe of any at home. For what delit do I fynde in any companie, when al degrees ſalute me with your deſolate order of living? And judge you what pleaſure I take, that earſt did glory with the beſt in the behavior of my brother, moſt welcome above all men to every eſtate, and now to heare you loaden with titles and ſurnames of “proude,” “diſdainful,” “ful of fancieſ,” with a thouſand other impoſicions of like reproch. Wherefore, for end, if ther remaine in you any care of your owne eſtimation, or reſpecte to content me, I beſech you eſteſones ſticke not with me in ſo ſmall a ſute as the diſcoverie of the cauſe and circumſtaunce of your annoyē; aſſuring you for my part, by the vertue of our parents deceſſed, that my life ſhal reſuſe no perill to remove your diſtreſ, and that with no leſſe good will then I deſier with my harte a ſpedie conuerſion of your malencolike countenance into regardes of auncient joye; imparting by that meanes an univerſal gladneſ to al your frends, who are driven to participat with you in ſorowe, til they ſee a reſtauracion of your former quiet.’ Wherwith Lyvio, takyng th’advantage of th’affected zeale of his ſyſter, who gave him aſſuraunce of her promiſſe in that whiche he durſte not demaunde, knewe not at the firſte what replie to preferre, but that it was not againſt nature ‘for a man to flitt from happye lyfe to heavey ſtate.’ ‘Neyther oughte it,’ ſayth he, ‘to ſeame a wonder to the people, when we expoſe alteration of complexion. For ſuche are equall to angels, or ſemblable to the brutall ſorte with out ſence, that are priviledged from paſſion, or can kepe ſo

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

temperate a meane in receyvyng and digestyng th' accidentes of this worlde; which, accordyng to th' occurrance and evenementes of tymes, do expose argumentes of mirth or sorowe in the faces of them whome they possesse. And, albeit, I confesse unto you, that as he beares his miserie beste that hides it moste, so suche are worthy to have the name of perfecte men, who, enconteringe their disaster with a constante magnanimitye of minde, do dissimule their greefe afore the worlde, to th'ende they only may give remedye to that which is common to none but theymselves. Wherin, for my parte, I coulde never enjoye a participation of suche perfection: neyther is th' occasion of my extremitie so easely covered, but the drouping regardes in my face are readie to make declaration of my torment. Besides I have no greate cause of shame of mine evill, consideringe the same importes an enterpryse of noble consequence: albeit, I make some conscience to discover the principall cause. But considering the roundnes of your offer, and howe boldly one of us maye participat wyth an other, I am contente to imparte with you the circumstance of my passion. Wherin, as you have charged me with chaunge and alteracion of countenance, debilitie, and diminucion of the strongest partes in me, with a savage and hagarde order of livyng, as you have tearmed it; so, in understandyng the cause, I hope you wyl excuse me of effectes of other folly then suche as nature hath enjoyned in generalitie to all men. And to cut of your suspence, and absolve your troubled mynde of all doubte, you shall understande that the force of love (depriving mine auncient lyberty) hath also transposed my former quiet and solace of mynde into these mournynge and pynynge regardes whiche you note in me: neyther can I be restored to the state whiche you wishe, without the assurance of that which I desier, whiche is the good wyll of her to whome love hath begiven so large power over me. And as every medecine is measured by the greatnes of the disease, and the lyght hurte is easely healed, without tryng the exquisite skill of the phisicion; so my gréeffe, beinge grounded upon great consequence, doth not onely assaile me with all sortes of passions and panges of

DISCOURSE

II

He beareth
his misery
beste that
hideth it
most.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE II sorowe ; but also denyeth to brooke the operacion of other remedie but suche as is distilled from the earbe that firste infected me. It is not the offer of smal harmes that makes me so hurtefull to myself and hateful to my frendes, nor the subject of tryflynge annoye that sturres up theis sighes and solytarie disposition in me, it is alas ! for beautye herselfe that I suffer. Eye ! the veray patterne and goddesse of all perfection, hath made me so forgetfull of myselfe, that I seame a straunger to my deare frendes. Neyther have I other power of myselfe then suche as is imparted unto me by her whose picture I cary so lyvely in my mynde.' Cornelia, altogether ignorant in the force of affection, and by reason of the gréenes of her yeres voyed of experience in tournynge over the volumes of love, coulde not but smyle for the firste at the jargon, or discourse, of her brother. Albeit, notinge his perplexitie, she let fall also certaine teares on the behalfe of his desolate state. And seynge hym wholly converted into contemplation of a vision, judged it an effecte of pitye to gyve ayde to his distresse. Whereupon, she desiered eftsones, in mery sorte, to knowe the goddesse of his devotions, 'to the ende,' sayth she, 'that I may yelde her honor for youre sake ; and, seinge you dare not presente her your requeste, I maye enter into the office of an intercessour, and praye for your delyverye. Neyther nede you doubtte to disclose her to me, nor dispayre of my dilygence and readye indeavour to do you good ; onles you be so farre spente wyth jalous passion that you feare I wyll ravishe her from you, or prevente the desier of your pleasure in beinge in love with her myself, you abuse the loyaltie of my meaning, and I doe wronge to exacte so farre upon your secret imagination.' 'I am contente,' sayth he, 'you jeste and take pleasure in the evill whiche I suffer, so that you will performe the effecte of your promise : whiche you maye the rather accomlishe, by the credit you have with her who is the onely cause of my tormente.' Whereof, after she had given hym a seconde assurance by othe and protestation of faythe, he tolde her (not without a freshe supplie of sorowe) that it was Camilla to whom his libertie was captife ; and in the ballance of whose compassion wayghed indifferently

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

II

the lycence of longer life or sentence diffinitive of present death; desierynge her, for ende, to make her privie to the paine he indured; and with all to procure spedie moderacion of his gréeffe, or els to awarde the writte of fatall somonce to hym that is not hable to feede the vaine of lyfe without the foode of her speciall favour. The gyrlle, delityng still in the amarous discourse of her brother, willed hym to take harte at grasse, and, makyng exchange of his solytarie order, to awake out of his dreame of dompes, and revoke his disposition of auncient cherefulnes; leaste his mistres, loathing his thyn and wearishe lookes, be affraide to graunt love to a stoane, or suffer herselfe to be embrased by one in whome is neither present delite nor likelihod of future pleasur. 'Ah! sister,' saith hee, 'how your libertie of tounge argueth your small experience in cases of love, whose delites consisteth in teares, sighes, and dolorous complaintes. Wherin, as suche as be moste constante of all make declaracion also of effecte of suche loyaltie, in takinge pleasure to recorde their sorowe with tunes of lamentable note; so, in exposinge the contrarie, we discover at unwares the slender affection we beare to the thyng we desier. And, for my parte, I fele no lesse pleasure by ymagination, when I see with the eyes of my mynde the beautie and other perfections of my deare Camilla, then you whiche never tasted of the apprehension of this frée constrainte whiche the destenie of love hath appointed to attend upon me.' 'I am glad,' saith she, 'to be warned in this sorte to eschewe the lyke evill in myselfe, and sorie to note the experience of so great an inconvenience in you; but, seing you are so sewerly rampired in your folye, that th'offer of perswasion is hateful unto you, I am contente you feede upon suche ease as you finde, and take pleasure in the simple contemplacion of the ymage of your saint. For, for my parte, I had rather have an hower of reste, disposinge myselfe to slepe as sone as my head and the pillow be met, then lye with mine armes of crosse, regardyng the course of the starres, and builde castelles in the ayre, or be troubled in dremyng of the dissolution of the worlde, and then to baptise suche impediments and enemies of reste by the name of "the

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE pleasures of loyall lovers," with addition that it is a peculiar
II glorie gyven them from above by the invisible goddess. It
is a pore repaste, God knoweth, for an emptie stomake to
feede only of wishes, and satisfye his thurst with drinkinge
of an emptie cuppe, or restore heate to the benommed
partes by a cold chymney, or satisfye the desieringe minde
with simple contemplacions.' Wherewith she retired, with
intent to trye the nexte daye whether Camylla had any
vaine that stretched to satisfye the desier of her brother;
whome she left with more argument of consolation then
afore, by reason of the hope he reposed in her diligence.
Here was a double offence in Livio, both to force his syster
to an enterpryse indecent for her honor and age, and also to
prefer her to be the *Darioletta* of his love; opening (as it
were) the way of voluptuous pleasure to al youth, the
whiche is to much enclined that way, by the corruption of
our own nature, without that we nede th'assistance of art
to supplie our defaultes in so unhoneſt an exercise. Albeit
our blindnes is so great in things of such folly, that (in
respectinge only the present) we never feare the fal of future
inconvenience, til, being served with the writ of present
penance, we finde to lytle leasure to repente so greate
offences. And albeit (accordyng to Aristotle) it is neces-
sarie to be privie to th'imperfections in the world, and to
knowe som tyme wherin we offende, yet gives he this counsell
with al, that we converte the experience of suche synister
encounters to a peculiar defense of ourselves againste th'
assaultes of semblable accidentes; and not to use it as an
authoritie or priviledge to justifie our wickednes, or consume
oure tyme in the ymitation of evill. Wherein, as the good
men are defended by their vertue, so let the worsor sorte be
ware by so manye millions of examples as our unhappie age,
at this present, is hable to furnishe in the like affaires.
And so to our historie. The morow after this discourse
betwen the dolorous Lyvio and his syster, it chaunced that
the doughter of Renaldo came all alone to see her com-
panyon Cornelia; who, albeit, was sufficiently mindefull of
her promise, yet was she furthered with a fit occasion by
Canylla. For that, after certaine litle devises betwene

It is necessary
to knowe the
imperfections
of the worlde.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

II

them, she asked the cause of the sodaine chaunge and alteration in her brother, and why he was no more seene to assiste the honeste assemblies in masque or other sorte. To whome Cornelia answered, that as she was of equall desyer to knowe th' occasion of his solitarie absence, so, grevyng above the reste with his pyning estate, 'I have asked' (saith she) 'the cause of his greefe; which, with the circumstance and effecte of all his annoy, procedes from you, my deare frende and companyon, as one in whome is norished the care and travaile of mynde of my sorowfull brother.' 'Howe is it possible,' saith the simple Camilla, 'that I should worke hym any wo; seinge hitherunto I have bene no lesse careful of his wel doing then curious of mine owne health; neither have I saide or don the thing (I am sewer) wherein was any pointe of evil meanyng towards hym, onlesse he make construction of my simple and honest zeale: like as also I woulde be sorie to be the author of his discontentement any waye?' 'The present passion of my brother,' saith Cornelia, 'is derived of a contrarie cause: for the to much delite and pleasure he hathe taken in seinge you hathe broughte hym to the brinke of this bane; and yet, as they wryte of the Scorpion, hee hopeth to drawe the remedye frome her that hath geven him the wounde.' 'Yf you make not a more plaine exposition of youre darke texte,' sayeth Camilla, 'I shall hardlye reade the misterye of youre reade, for as yet I understande nothinge but highe Duche.' 'Eye marye!' sayeth th' other, 'and therein consisteth the chiefeste cause of my greefe: for if the peculyar affection of my brother were comon also to you, or that you enjoyed but a simple perticipacion of his annoy, you shoulde not onlye understande that which I am driven to unfolde, but be as readie to geve the remedie, as hee hathe reason in the meanwhile to suffer the grefe, or I ashamed to be the messenger.' 'Do awaye this philosophie, my deare frende,' saythe Camilla, 'and cutte of at laste my doubtfull suspence touchinge your meanyng; for if th' uttermoste of that whiche is in me maye stande hym in steade, I will eyther performe the full of your demaunde, or at least yelde you such reason to the contrarye, that you shal be voyde of

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE II just cause to complaine of myne aunswere.' Here Cornelia tolde her that th'origynall of her brother's evill proceded of a wonderfull vehemencye of love he bare to her; with addition that if she yelded hym not the hyer of his zeale wyth a counterchaunge of affection, she shoulde see in shorte tyme the ende of his lyfe, no lesse desperatelye then in secrete sorowe hee consumeth the beste of his age in the loyall servitude he hath alreadye vowed on her behalfe. 'And, for my parte,' sayeth shee (not without some teares), 'as the violence of his passion, only knowen unto me, hathe forced me to stande here th'unseamely solycitor of his cause; so, if it be a vertue to expose compassion uppon th'afflicted, lette the respecte of my dystresse sturre uppe an increase of pitie in you to ayde the desolation of my carefull brother. Beholde! my Camilla, the circumstance of my presente extremitie; and ymagyn that wyth the losse of my brother dekaieth the onely proppe and pillor of my lyfe. And yet, simple girle that I am, voide of experience in such affayres, lo! here I am constrained to builde requestes no lesse inconvenient to my estate then unseamelye for my yeares. Albeit for my purgacion towards you, I hope the lawe of nature, and love of the syster towards her brother, will excuse this diligence and indevor which I use to preserve the life of him whom I holde no lesse deare then the tendrest parte of myne eye.' Wherwith Camilla not without argumentes of some litle femynine anger staide her furthur discourse with this aunswere:—'Who wolde have thought,' sayeth she, 'that a gentlewoman of your qualytic and callinge wolde have exceded the lymittes of her estymacion, so farr as, for the respecte of the folishe appetit of a yonge man, to discharge the parte of a shameles messenger, in a case no lesse unworthie for your honour then contrarye to me to whom th'imbassage is dressed? Arte thou so credulus in the constancie of men (myne own Cornelia) that thou wilt repose good earnest in that wherin they take pleasure to dissemble? Or arte thou of opynion that as often as the jolytie of fraile youth do preferre sighes, and traunces, with other dollorous regardes, painted by dissymuled pollicie in the forefront of their faces, that it

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

is true love that possesseth them, or honeste desier that moveth their dule? Nothinge lesse; for teares for the moste parte are the true messengers of the dollour of the harte, and oughte chieflie to move compassion, yet in cases of love they bee but suborned signes and declaracions of wanton desier, and for that cause oughte not to receive other meede thenne their meanyng dothe meritte; seynge wythall that the desierous mynde groundes his pretence moste commonlye upon the thyng whyche vertue canne not brooke, and reason denieth to graunte. And admitt it bee a follie peculyar to many, and a passion ymparted to all men by nature, to follow th'instinct of love, what grudge of conscience, I praie you, is it to a maide to suffer her vaine lover to pyne upon creaditte, soo that shee stande so surelye upon the garde of her chastetie, that shee be not seduced wyth his flatteryng charmes? It is not in our power to lette them to love: onlye we oughte to be carefull of our honour, and shon th'infection, leaste we become unhappye afore the tyme. Besydes, howe greatlye shoulde wee abuse oure dutie and obedience towardes oure parentes, in passinge a graunte of oure good will wythoute their consente, whyche onely oughte to directe us in any sorte whatsoever. No! no! lett them lamente, and measure their mournynge at what intereste they thinke good, the same shall not staie the course of my sleepe, neither shal their teares eclips the least moment of my pleasure and contentment; for, when all is sayde, wee ought to conster the meaninge of these fayned sorowes to none other ende but as privie baites to entangle the simple and delicate youthe of us women. For when we ymparte compassion to their doleful alarams, and makes them the maysters of their desiers, God knoweth the reward we fynde and how sone they laughe at oure fragilitie; and, takinge pleasure to see us in passion, do leave us pore wretches to the hyer of oure follie. So if Lyvio have ymagyned a bargaine of love, lett hym make muche of his owne conceite, and embrace the shadowe of his fansie; for, for my parte, it shal suffice me to be armed with resistaunce, and that I am voide of desier to encownter him or any other in that sort. Wherwith, contenting my selfe with the honest

DISCOURSE

II

Teares the true messengers of the dollour of the harte.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE II
anytie betwene you and me, my deare Cornelia, I conjure you by the vertue of the same, to give over the pursute of this quest, seinge that, besides the losse of tyme, and slender proffit you are like to reape of your travaile, you shal also lose a companion of me, with small commendation to yourselve in courtinge the gestes that hawnte your howse with requestes of suche unseamelye effecte.' Whyche laste resolution stucke greatly on the stomake of Cornelia, for that the disdainefull repulse of her companion argued a dispaire hereafter to ease the distresses of her brother. But chieffie she greved in that Camylla seemed to enter into synister conceites against her: whiche, with an honest shame of that whiche was alreadye passed her mouthe, and feare any more to offende that waye, together with her ignorance in the ordynarie replies of suche as have taken degrees in the skoole of love, made her preferre her excuse in simple sorte, with promise here after to disclayme th' enterprise. And blamyng whollie th' ymportunytie of her brother, desired, notwithstandinge, her Camilla not to discontynue her custome of repaire to her lodginge. Whereunto shee condescended, and retired to the pallais of her father leaving Cornelia in disputation with herselfe what aunswere to forge to her desolate brother. Who, as sone as he understode of the retire of his mistres, addressed him to his systers; whom, because he sawe in the attire of sorow—I meanè, her eyes bathed in the teares of her late repulse—he gave judgement ymediatlie uppon the case, with firme prerswacion that Camilla did not onely denie his requeste, but also misliked wyth the messenger in performing her promise. The force of which conceites drave him into a passion of alterations and change of collour, not without some argumente of mortall perill to his person, afore he demaunded to heare the aunswere; whiche, being not unmarked of the girle, she prevented th' offer of further daunger, with a contrary of that which Camilla tolde her; and, for feare of further inconveniencie by hys soddayne traunce, declared unto him, that, albeit his mistres was not so quick of consent as his extremetic required, yet her hart was not so hard frozen but there were meanes to thawe it; neyther was her aunswere without hope, although at the

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

II

firste she seamed to objecte the disloyalety and ordenarve ficcyon of men: willinge hym, for the rest, to abandon dispaire, and arminge himselfe with corage, to dysmisse his solitarie and savage order of lyfe. Wherin, for a more increase of uncerteyne consolation, she tolde him that, albeit it was as yet but the foremone, and that he had no reason to advaunce hymselfe so farre as to crave mutuall conference, yet he nede not forbear to write to her, and that, wyth the consente of tyme and place, she woulde deliver the letter, wyth indevor to bringe her last resolution. Wherwith, albeit shee seamed only to feede the tyme, with intente to make hym discontinue his fancies, attempting notwithstanding a wonderfull ympossibilitie; for that hee was so stalled in his amarus golphe, that al the pilottes belonginge to the infynit galies of Venice lackt force to hale hym out; yet seamed she thereby to breathe an avre of freshe comfort into all the partes of her languishinge brother, who, likinge her advise, determyned to put her councill in execution. Wheruppon, as one of superficial skil in writinge th' Ytalyan verse, he composed a certeine *elegie*, conteynyng the some of his sorowe and substance of his request. Whereof, because I have not the true copie, I leave it to the judgemente of them that have redd it; but thus much I presume of his sorowe, that he did not ende his epistle without an infynitie of teares, ympartinge the waterie dewe of the same on diverse partes of the paper, to th'ende the same mighte argue to his ladie the dollor of his passion that governed him duringe the tyme of that contemplacion. Which approved sufficientlye his follie, wyth declaracion howe well they be beguenned that be coffied wyth a nighte capp of such stoofe as wrapped the emptie heade of our Lyvvo; who failed not the nexte daye to delyver his tragicall letter to his syster, with great charge of expedicion in presenting it to his mistres. Cornelia here was doble passioned, both to see her brother persever in his follie, without intermission of tormente, and also that shee was forced to performe a seconde embassage to her whose companie and frendshippe shee was sewer to abandon for ever, if she added newe tearmes to her former requeste. But if she had bene as wel seene in the subtilities

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE of love, as she seamed moste simple in experience in that arte, she woulde have considered, that what angrie clowdes soever appeare in the face of women, yet take they a singuler pleasure to be courted, and are not so angrie indeede as their countenance doth argue, when their servauntes do visit them with letters of humylitie. And differringe, in this sorte, certeine dayes the delyverie of the letter; fearinge that whych happened—that yf Camilla refused to performe th' effecte, the daunger of her brother colde be no lesse then, either presente death by despaire, or at the leaste to enter in some mortall sicknes; yet, beinge pressed with his contynuall ymportunities, the pore girle determynd to trye the forde, and sounde eftesones the harte of Camilla, who (as it chaunced) came the same after none to see Cornelia. Wher, after they had made an experience of their skil in a banquet of curious confectiōns, Cornelia not unmindful of the disease of her brother, and seing th' offer of oportunitie, for that the place was voide of ympedimente of companie savinge the two girles, drewe the letter out of her poket, and, with a smilinge regarde, entermedled with honeste shame, gave it to Camilla, desieringe her to reade it, and judge what bee the follies of lovers. Camilla, ymagynynge by and by from what parte th' imassage was sente, tolde her in sorte of pleasante anger, that as she was not ignorante in the meanyng of that misterie, and that if it were not more for the respecte of the bringer then disier to contente hym that sente it, and that she was passed the feare of any charme conteyned in the same, shee woulde committe it to a thousande morselles in her presence; so, if the readinge broughte cause of discontentemente, she gave her assurance to performe th' uttermoste of her former promisse. Cornelia alledged ignoraunce in the matter. 'Only,' sayth she, 'I can thus far assure you that I have not in charge to presente you wyth letter or message from any man; for, as I founde it this morninge uppon the steares goinge oute of my chamber, so I hope you will neither enjoyne me blame nor penaunce for the falte wherin myne innocencye is sufficiente to cleare me.' 'Well! well!' sayeth Camilla, 'I will not sticke to give you the readinge of these amarus lynes, arguinge as small pleasure to

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

II

hym as that write them as evill received of me to whom they are dressed.' Wherwith she opened the pacquett, and redd the roll from th'one ende to th'other. Wherin, albeit she discovered in her face a singler pleasure, begynning even nowe to fele the mocions of love with in her tender breast, and taste of the appetit of a desier which she durst not satisfy, yet, using her accustomed wisdome in conceylinge that she desired moste, she covered the suspicion of affection with certeine tearmes of reproche, which she bestowed upon her simple companion in this sort:—'I finde nowe,' sayeth shee, 'that my pacience and facilitie in hearynge your re-portes do yelde you to muche favor in furtheringe your fonde practise; which you nede not go about to coollour with other enamell then the complection of your owne nature, seinge that she wyth whom you have to do, can spie a flee in the milke, and give judgements of th'intente of these baites, wyth th'effecte of your meanyng; desiering you (for preventyng a further inconvenience in your brother) to seke to cure his disease as you may, leaste, in contynuyng his follie, hee further a subvercion of that which is the beste parte in him. For he hathe alreadye of me as much as he may hope for with assurance. And, for your part, as you seame to reappose neither religion nor vertue in promisses—for that the laste tyme we weare in tearmes of these follies, you gave me assurance to discontinue th'enterprise—so that it is I that am readie to give punyshmente to mine owne indiscretion, and endure the penance of mine owne rashenes, in deprivinge me of the companie wherin I tooke moste pleasure and contentmente, biddinge you farewell till better occasions maye restore our famyliar visitacions.' Wherwith she put no difference between doing and sayinge, fearing that if she had attended the replie of Cornelia, she had bene in daunger to yelde to the bargaine, in openyng her cares to wide to the perswasions of her companion; whome she left no lesse astonied then her selfe traused and full of diverse ymagynacions, begynnyng even then to measure th'affection of Livio, and give judgement of his loyaltie by the contynuacion and vehemencie of his passion, with absolute resolucion (for al

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE II her dissymuled disdayne) to change purpose and admitt the offer of his frendshippe, if she were eftsones required by hym or any in his behalfe; blamyng her rashenes in reprochyinge hys syster, and crueltie more thenne conveniente to her brother, who beganne even nowe to take possession of her thoughtes, and make hym selfe a secrete mediator in his owne cause. Wherein, sewerly, may be noted in experience of the fragilitie and inconstante disposition of man, and specially in th'affaires of love; seyng that she whiche earste detested everye waye to be pertaker of suche ympression, is nowe chaunged in a momente, and broughte to laie her heade under the yoke of servile affection, makinge (as it were) a simple and plaine table of her harte, to th'ende to drawe thereupon a forme of thoughtes and ymagynacions in diverse collours, according to the direction of hym that thus hath gott the government of her libertie with authoritie to dispose of her as hee thinkes good. And yet I cannot but allowe her longe delaie, and judge her of greate wisdom to suspende her consente till she had wel considered of the matter, seinge the dailie inconveniences happeninge to suche as, neyther carefull of their honor, nor curious of their quiet, do admit indescrately the bargaine at the fyrste offer, without knowinge the merite of the persones, or exanynynge the circumstancye of the future sequeile of theyr love. Wherof are derived so many examples of a number of miserable men endinge their lives by unhappie dispaire, whose wretchednes ought to warne us to delibrate at large afore we put in execution, and to use a reasonable meane in our doinge: I meane, not to ron hedlonge into the golphe of affection, leaste our daunger be equall to the peryl of the infortunate Acarestrians; who, because they were disfavored of their ladyes, entered into such conceites of mortall grefe, that, when they would willinglie have retired and bene delivered, it was eyther ympossible or at least veraie hard to give theym remedy. To whych crew of desperate lovers we may wel add the desaster of thys Livio; who, assured of th'aunswere of his ladie, as well by hys sister, as also by the regards of disdayne he noted in her farewell when she departed (whereof he was partaker by

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

shrowdinge hymselfe in a secrete corner of the chamber duringe the perley of the two maydes) fel ymedyatelye into so strange a sickenes, that, abandonynge at the fyrst the desyer of slepe, wyth the appetit of the stomacke, he lefte the phizicians at th'ende of their wittes: who, beyng voyde of skill to cure hys disease, tolde hys frendes that if he woulde not receive comfort of hymself, his life was in hazarde, for that hys evill proceded onely of passions and inwarde sorowe of the harte. Wherein they had reason, seynge that the disease of love is contrarye to the disposition of all other greves. For as there is no distresse, what extremitie so ever it importe, but it maye be eyther cured or qualesied by certaine drogues and confections devised by art to comforte the stomake and restore the harte to a gladnes; so the pacient plunged in the passions of the mynde, can neyther broke th'assistance of phizicke nor operacion of hearbes; onely the presence or simple worde of hys mistres, hath more power over hys evill, then all the mysticall or artificiall powders devised by the moste experte phizicians that ever cam out of th'university of Paris or Padua. Whereof th'experience apperes in this Livio; who, languishynge every daye from evill to worse, consumed by pecemeale with the force of his amarous fier (no lesse then the snow, lying upon the syde of a mountaine, yeldes and wastes with the heate of the son) which also forced such inward grefe to his sorowfull sister, together with dispaire of any meane to restore hym (for that Camilla discontinued her repaire to vysitt her) that she yelded tribute to his passion with a dysease of equall mortalitie, impartynge suche alarams of dollor thorowe all the partes of her bodye that she was constrained to kepe her bead in a litle cabynett joyninge, to the lodgynge of Livio; who, by the thinnes of the wall which only devided their chambers, was pertaker of the leaste worde that was spoken in the lodgynge of hys sister, whose grevous groanes, forced by the violence of a burnynge fever, gave such increase to the daunger of Livio, that he was at point to yelde to the laste alaram of life, if the sicknes of his sister had not broughte the spedye remedye of hys dysease. For Camilla, astonied without measure that

DISCOURSE

II

The disease of love contrary to the disposition of other greves.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE she neyther mette Cornelia at the church, sawe her at the gate, nor wyndowe, nor any assemblye what soever, learned so much by inquisicion that she was advertised of the mortall daunger of Livio, together wyth th'extremitye of hys syster, who (yf they were not reskewed by greate merveyle) were at poynte to be shrined together at one instante in theyr fatall tombe. Here Camylla began to recante her auncient creweltye. For, in ceassyng any longer to dissimule her secrett affection to her Livio, and the sorowe shee suffered for th'affliction of hys syster, she seamed to purifie the wronge shee hadde donne to theym bothe thorowe a ryver of affected teares, distillynge by suche aboundance from her watery eyes that she seamed at the poynte to visitt the purgatorye of th'other woorld, to doo penance for the twoe evilles whereof she confessed her selfe to bee th'onlye occasion. Wherein, after she hadde spent certaine howers in publicke complainte, whose dollour seamed of force to move the heavens to teares, and staye the course of the sonne, fealyng still an increase of passion by the vehemencie of love, shee was constrayned to abandon the place and performe the reste of her exclamacion agaynste her crueltie all alone in her chamber, with thys tearmes:—

‘What furye or force infernall is thys, whyche, shakynge the fortresse and most constante parte in me, hathe made me, in one moment, yelde to that wherin I have bene hitherto invincible? Is it possible alas! that that whyche I judged a dissembled passion in thys infortunat gentleman shoulde torne to a true effecte of undowted faith, confirmed by the power of that whiche we call love in the hartes of men? Why have not I considered that the horse whyche is of noble corage will be governed by the shadowe of a rodde, where the dull beaste is skarecely sturred with the princkynge of the spurres? The fearefull dogge dothe also barke more then bite, and depest rivers do runne with leaste noyse. So nature hathe imparted a peculiar instinct to the noble minde, not only to be more delicate in diet, and ardante in affection, but also to embrace the objecte of their fancie with a more vehemencie of desire and passion then the rest of the rude and grosse sorte, who are not worthy to be partakers of the

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

II

misteries in true love. Ah Livio! Livio! howe doo I feele a mocion of that whych I can not tearme other wayes than a free force without constrainte, and a dollour without cause or complainte! For I am possest with an evill, wherein I take pleasure, and feeses an experience of a paine, without the which I thinke the lyfe of man can hardely be sustained. And yet my mynde wavereth in suche dredefull conceites, that I feare to make declaracion of that which bothe law of love and dutie of my conscience bindes me to expose for the solace and relyefe of thy presente affliction: but, alas! the renoume of myne honeste name is so deare unto me, that I wishe rather to embrace the extreme panges of death, then give one symple occasion of discredit to mine auncient vertue. For that as man's wisdome is hable to supplie the losses of all other thinges; so it is not only unfurnished of meanes to restore the forfait of our honestye, but also voyde of arte to cover the falte of so greate an offence. But is it a juste imputation, or worthye falte, when in our busynes wee respecte vertue, and concludes the ende of our enterpryse wyth an honeste meanynge? Ys it not a dedde of compassion to gyve soccours to hym that standes in watter upp to the throte, and at the pointe to peryshe for want of help? What can we do lesse then be careful to recover hym who offereth hys lyfe in the sacrefise of affection for our sakes? Who can justly tearme our doynge by the title of offence, when we yelde a mutuall amitye to hym that pursueth our goodwill wyth a respecte and intente of lawfull mariage? No! No! Cornelia, thowe shalte not lose thy brother, nor I the companie of so deare a frende, for lacke to aunswere in reciprocal wil to him, who, with the peril of his life, conceiles the argument of hys sorow. Ah! most constant and loyall Lyvio, seyng the reputacion of myne honour denieth me accesses and conference with the, and the shame doth close my mouthe from discoverynge the secret of my good meaninge towards the, take corage, and discharg thou th' office of a bolde solyciter to her that is no lesse redde to grante then thou meritorious to have, and, dispoiled alreadye of all hagarde crueltie, is not onely prest to reknowledge the honour whyche thou offreste me, but also

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE II whollye framed to the postey and appetit of thy will. And nowe do I fele that againste the force and power of love, the strongest resistaunce is to weake, neyther is the whole worlde of sufficient strength to put to utteraunce the soldiours whome he preferreth in the feylde. Whereof, who is a more late experience then my selfe; who, earste defyinge hys malice, and nowe to attende upon the chariott of hys triumphe, and yeld me prisonner to hym, who, beyng hitherunto my bondman, hathe nowe made me the slave of his importunat requestes? And seynge the sentence is alreadye paste, and confirmed by the voice of my destynies, why do I conceile my passion in the myddest of a thousande flames whiche tormentes me within, or why do I dissemble that, I desire moste, or retire myne eyes from the view wherein they chieffye delite? Why do my feete staye to transporte thys body to the place where the harte hath already taken possession? Wherwith she determyned the spedye consolation of Lyvio, wyth no other drogoue or confection then a free consente of her love, yf the same were eftsoones demaunded. And there uppon collored her goynge to his logynge to see Cornelia; whome, as shee founde in her bedde, wyth more argumentes of deathe then apparance of lyfe, by reason of a generalle weakenes whyche hadde mortyfied the whole strengthe of her body; so she hadde not spent many wordes in the consolation of her companion, but Livio, smellynge as it were the presence of his ladye, asked hys syster who was wyth her; who answered, that onely Camylla kepte her companie. Wherewith, forcing a supplie of courage in his fainte harte, with intente to knowe the fynall areste of his lyfe or death, began to plede wyth hys absent mistres in this sorte:—'Yf there be any hope in extremetye, or expectacion of helpe in mortall distresse, it is tyme nowe (good madam) to converte your auncient crueltie into an humour of compassion; both to defende yourself from th'ymputacion of a tyrant, and my lyfe from a wretched ende of miserable despair. Ceasse hensfurthe to dissymule th'uttermost of your rigour, or drop of present grace, seinge that both the one and the other hath indifferent power to releve my distresse, cyther by death in denieng me

Livio at the point of death speaketh to his misters.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

II

your favour, or contynuance of longer lyfe by imparting your specielle grace. Come! cruell misters, and see thy unfortunate Livio, without hart, hope, or argument of longer breathe; yf, by a promisse of thy good will, thou breathe not an ayre of freshe consolacion, and, by the sommaunce of thy worde, revoke my dyeng mynde from thys tombe of myserable dispaire; wherein I feele myself so tormented with th' officers of deathe, that nature, ceassing to supplie my weary partes with force, I fynd an impossibilitie in my tonge to obey any longer the desyers of my hart.' Wherewith his breath began to drawe short, staying the course of further speche, yf not that in entrvng into hys fatall traunce he exposed certeine dolefull groanes, whyche caused bothe the younge ladies to ronne in haste to the succour of the patient; whome they founde stryving with th' extremetie of hys laste pange, albeit not without some litle perve of breathe, whyche he seamed to reserve wyth greate difficultie. Whereuppon, Camilla, seyng a prouffe of his constancie even to the laste moment, and hayng but one meane to releve hys traunce, made no conscience to lett fall her rosve and courall lypes upon the mortified mouthe of her dyng Livio; who receyved suche present consolacion by thys offer of favor unloked for, that the force of nature and vitall strengthe, ready to depart out of every vayne of hys bodye, retired to theyr auncient places. Wherewith, he, usyng the benefytt of his fortune, forgatt not to embrace his ladve, with an infinite of kysses, whereof shee restored hym a double interest. Albeit, because he shoulde make no greate proffytt of thys soddayne courtesye, and to prevent with all a suspicion of lyghte behaviour in herself, she used her accustomed wysdome, entering into familiar conference in thys sorte:—'I hope, Seigneur Livio, you will not converte thys compassion whych I have used in the rappeale of your mortall farewell in any synister opinion of the diminucion of th' integretie of Camilla; who, as longe as she lyveth, will so stande upon the garde of her honour and honeste renowme, that no degree shall have juste cause to reprehende the leaste favor shee extendes to any man. In whyche conceite, I am

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE also content to impart a credyt to your loyaltie, perswad-
II ynge the same to bee without fiction: whereof I am no lesse
glade then I hope the love whyche youe beare me is chaste
and of honest intent, respectynge an ende of sinceritie. For
yf I sawe any lykelyhodd to the contrary, and that a dyse-
ordinat wyll did guide your desyer and were the cause of
your passion, assure your selfe I woulde make lesse con-
science to committe me to the mereye of the moste horrible
tourmentes in the worlde, eye! and perill of present deathe,
then to leave any parte of that whyche makes me marche
without blushynge amongst the beaste of our contrey. In
whyche respecte, wyth full perswacion of a sincere simplicite
in your love, I can not but retourne you a semblable favour,
with absolute assuraunce from thys instaunte of such firme
affection and zeale as any ladye oughte to impart to hym
who seekes her frendshyppe in sorte of honeste and lawfull
marriage. Neyther shall yt decaye after th'effecte of desyer
be performed, nor dymynishe by any synister accident,
untill the fatall sequestracion of our sowle and bodye.
Whereof, lette us use wisdome in the conveyghe of suche
affaires as maye bee taken bothe in good and evyll parte,
to th'ende that the majestye of the highest beyng not
offended, our honour fall not into the slaunder of the worlde.
Wherein, for a first charge to bee comitted to your diligence,
and withall to prefer an assured effect of the vehemencie of
your affection towards me, dispose yourself to demaunde
me of my father; whose consent you shall fynde me to
confirme in such sorte as yourselfe shal devise. Arme
yourselfe then with comfort and retire to healthe, at the
request of her, who, takynge no pleasure in solitarie regards,
wisheth you to reserve this precious flower of your youth
for other exercises then to wast with passions of desperacion,
no lesse enemies to the strengthe of the bodye then hurtefull
to the healthe of the sowle. And seyinge, besides, that in
the recovery of you consistes the healthe of your syster,
suspende no longer the consolacion of her, and contentement
of your selfe and me; who, in attendynge your expedicion
to procure the good will of my father, will dispose
myselfe in the meane while to bee thankfull unto you any

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

II

waye wherein myne honour and honestye will justifie my doynge.' Whiche laste wordes seamed of suche operation in the traunsed mynde of Livio, that, discharged (as it were) of a perillous vision in a dreame, lyfted up hys eyes and handes towardes heaven, yeldyng honour to the goddes for hys happye encounter, and, kyssyng the white and delicate hande of hys newe mystresse, he forgatt not to gyve her suche humble thankes as the greatenes of hys felicitie required; whych seamyng to hym to excede the compasse and power of fortune, judged it rather the vertue of a dyvyn miracle then an effect mortall, for that, in so soddayne a moment, he was acquitted of so perentory a daunger; assuring her, that, assone as health and strengthe of body woulde assyste the desyer of his mynde, he would performe her commaundement in demaundyng her father's consent. Wherein he hoped to delay no long time, for that he felte a wonderful approche of health by the viewe of her presence in his late and laste storme of affliction. 'I wold do no lesse' (saith she) 'then yelde you soccours in so great an extremetie, both to delyver myselfe out of payne in seinge you passioned, and also to qualifye the greffe of my deare companion your syster; to whom you are also bounde in some sorte to be thankful for my commynge hether. For albeit my conscience sommoned me to a compassion of your torment, with desier to yelde you the due hyer and consideracion of the honest love you beare me, yet the regarde of mine honour denyng me to visite you, seamed an impediment to th'effect of that wherunto I was bounde by so many duetifull merites. Prayinge you, for ende, to excuse that whiche is past, and pardon me for the present, in that I can not assiste you with longer companye; perswadyng thyselve (my deare Lyvio) that althoughe my bodye muste supplie another place to coullour the trafficque of our love, and prevent suspicion, yet thou haste made suche a stealth of my harte that the same will not fayle to kepe the companye in my absence.' Wherewith takyng her leave, with a chaste kysse of her servant, and frendlye farewell to Cornelia, she retireth to her father's palais, leavyng her lover well lightned of all his cares, sayyng of a

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE necessarye meane to sounde the good will of the olde
II Reinaldo. Wherin, notwithstandinge, he used suche expedicion of diligence, that, afore hymselfe coulde enjoye the benefyt of perfect health, he procured certaine auncient gentlemen, his neare parents, to performe his requeste to th'old man; whom they solicited with suche instance and in sorte of mariage, that he admitted theyr offer, and confirmed the bargaine with theis wordes, that onely Livio should be the firste that should renounce the vale. 'Albeit,' saith he, 'because of th'infirmite of mine age, I use the consent of my son in all my affaires of importance, so I crave onely your patience in the fynall conclusion of the mariage til his retourne from Rome; at which time only yourselves shal name the day of consommation.' In this aunswere, albeit, appeared an impediment to the performance of the mariage (for that, as you have hearde, Claudio envyed the state of Livio, whiche argued a difficultie in him to approve th'allyance) yet Camilla, understanding the resolution of both their parentes, gave as sewer judgemente of the mariage, as if it had bene alredie published in the churche, and therupon began to enlarge her familiar hawnte and repaire to Livio; whom, if she embrased afore with earnest zeale, it was nothings in respectt of the vehemencie of her present affection; which also devyded hymselfe into such a *sympathia*, and equalitie of love in them bothe, that it spredde abrode by indiffrent braunches in bothe their hartes; like as the morninge son in the easte giveth by litle and lytle contynuall encrease to his beames, comforting the creatures uppon earth. And in this often enterviewe together, Lyvio, enjoyenge nowe his auncient health and dexteritie of body, being one day (amongest the rest) with his lady in the chamber of his syster, toke his lute, and songe a ditie whiche hee had made of their recipocall passion, wyth suche contentemente to hys Camilla, that she desired hym eftesones to repaite it in semblable note, as wel for the delyte of the tune, which he performed with a voice to her contentacion, as also the subtill stile and fyne conveyge of the matter, arguinge a conclusion of that which they bothe wished wyth equall appitit; seinge that,

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

II

as their continuall haunt and frequentacion together gave increase to their desyer, so they were both of opynion, that love colde not beare the title of perfecte affection, if th' effect of that whych was indifferently wished of them both, did not make perfect the thyng which hitherunto was debated but by wordes. Other wayes, that whiche was passed betwene them, beinge but a naked love, without effecte other then certeine delicate kysses—whyche served rather to kyndle the coales of desyer then quenche the flame alredye burning within their intralls—seamed but a simple platte or playne table, whiche the conninge painter hath smothed for the nonst to drawe some ymage of exquisytt skille. Wherin beinge overcharged with intolleracion of desyer, and fynding th' abode of Claudio longer thenne they ymaged, they passed unhappely a pryvye contract betwene themselves; with expectation to consomat the ful of the matter, with a due hyer of the paines they indured indifferently in attendinge an effecte of their pleasure, at the retorne of Claudio from Rome. But here Fortune began to presente herselfe uppon the stage, as one that wil be knowen to beare a swaighe in the good happe or infelicitie of man; and is of suche unconstante and malicious regard towardes us, that, when we thinke we bee paste the feare of all perill, and trodden all desasters under our feete, it is then that we fynde leaste assurance in the thynges wherein we reapposed our chiefest pleasure. And in the turninge of her weale is figured the alteracion of oure wordlie affaires; I meane, by a conversion of thynges which earste seamed pleasant and delicat, into a taste excedinge the bitternes of gal; in such sorte, that often tymes wee fynde deathe of more easye burden then wee are hable to beare the panges whiche ordenarilye attende the flatteries of this uncerteine Fortune: whom the poetes and painters (not wythout cause) have drawen in the picture of a blynd woman, standing uppon a tickle staie of an unconstant globe or bowle, representinge thereby her fragilitie, and how blindlye she guides the thynges of the world. What authorities colde I inferr to exclaime agaynst her mobylitie, if it were not for the shortnes of tyme, and that I wil not cloye your memory, wyth so tedious a discourse. Howe

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE

II

Quintus
Scipio.

manye have wee seene at the pointe to enjoye a monarkye, kingdom, or siegneurie, who, when they leaste thoughte of commutacion or change, have loste their honoure, expulsed their estates, and at laste ended their lyves by a miserable death. Who have redde the sixte booke of Valerius Maximus may justefye my opynion by th'example of Quintus Scipio, a valiant capteyne and consull in Rome, who, longe tyme havinge Fortune at commaundement was seene in a moment, cut in morselles, servinge as unworthie foode to the ravenous beastes issuinge oute of the savage desarts. Radagaso, sometime king of the Gothes, for all th'assuerance he reapposed in his invincible armye (as he thought), was not expempted frome the dome of inconstante and mortall destynie; for that, his people slaine, his captaines fled, and he taken prisoner, passed under the sentence of an infamous death by Stilicon, generall of th'armye at that time for th'emprour Honorius. Wyth other infynit proffes of antiquitie, wherwith it is no neede to fyll my paper, seinge the domesticall accedentes and like chaunces happeninge amongst oure neighbours at hoame do give sufficient testimonye and faithe of that whiche wee go aboute to prove. And nowe beinge upon the discourse of Livio and his unfortunat Camilla, who, albeit were neyther princes nor governors of kingdomes, yet beinge in the paradise of their pleasure, and at the pointe to performe the last acte of their delytes, encountred in one moment a chang and synister subvercion, all contrarye to the appointmente whiche they had resolved upon their future mariage. And sewer it is an argument of the greatest folly that can bee, to promisse ourselves an assurance of thinges whiche depende upon the will and disposition of an other, upon whiche the yssue is also moste uncerteine: for that, differing from us in counsell and ymaginacion, they are also without care in what sort wee take their judgement, seinge they depende no waye upon us nor our fancy. Like as it happened to these ii infortunat lovers: for Claudio nowe ritorned, and not likinge any way th'alliance betwene Lyvyo and his sister, wrought so muche with his father (who sawe not but by the eyes of his son, nor attempted any thinge whercinto Claudio added not the

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

conclusion) that Reinaldo renounced the words of his former consent, pacifyenge the parents of Lyvio, by the beste parswacions he cold ymagyn, with thanks to the yong man equal to the greatnes of the honor whiche he offred in seking to be his son in law. Theis newes were no soner ymported to our ii lovers, but it is to be thoughte they escaped not without sondrye alarams of mortall grefe; whiche had dismissed their passions with the ende of their lyves, if it had not bene for the offer of a simple hope wherupon they grounded a new consolacion: for that they expected at length a remorse in th'olde man (by reason of his promise) to justefye the contract alreadye passed betwene them two. Wherof, Camilla, as pinched wyth a grudge of more wronge then th'other, for that she sawe the unjuste malice of her brother was th'only staie of th'effecte of her determynacion, entred into a passion of suche frettinge conceites, tempered wyth a mortall hate to Claudio, an indissoluble zeale to her servante, and a juste dispite agaynst the debylitie of her father, that she was at the point to use force agaynst herselfe, and advance th'effecte of their malice by her untymely death. Wherein, because she woulde not discover openly that which was not yet douted of any, shee retired to a moderation in her greefe, till, the firste parte of the eveninge beyng spent, the desier of sleepe somoned every man to wythdraw hymselfe to his lodginge, when she, in her chamber, wyth th'only company of her woman, began to burst out into newe termes of complainte, cursing the hower of her birthe, accusinge the weaknes and want of corage in her father, but chiefly enveihed agaynste th'unhappie arryvall of her brother in thys sorte,—‘What injustice or crueltie is this of the heavens, to give us a harte to chuse and libertie to love one of equall desyer and semblable will, and then to bar us the priviledge of that fredom in not makinge a perfection of that whych nature hath sett abroche in us by the communyon and conjunction of our thoughtes? Is it reason the bodye be more respected then the mynde, in that the harte and inwarde partes, making a choice of affection, sholde not have authoritye to sommon the bodye as their subjecte to obey th'instinctes and suggestions of the spirite?

DISCOURSE

II

The complainte of Camilla.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE

II

Nature sewer doth abuse her reputacion in this case, to coefe her creatures with th'attyre of love, makyng a mutuall consente in both parties, and then to denie the consommacion of the thinge herselfe did fyrst begyn in us. From whence comes th'iniquitie of that lawe which alloweth a father for his pleasure only, and without justice, to force an inclynacion of his children to that which is neither necessarye nor conveniente for them? Is it not sufficient alas! that we yelde them honoure, with the tribute of our dutie and service; that wee give soccour to their olde yeres, and attempte nothing without their consent; but that wee muste be subjecte to a further tyrannye in performinge the sentence of their thradom, althoughc it dyffer whollye from our will and choice? And if mariage be a free conjunction, dependenge uppon an unytic or conformetie of both partes, how can I refuce that wherof is passed alredeye a confirmacion, or admit other husband then hee to whom I ham bounde by vowe of consente? Ah! this is one of the frutes of tyrannouse love, to worke the effecte of a consente betwene us, withoute leavinge us a meane to bryng the same to perfection, or suffer us to consider whether the parties knitt together by unytic of affection in spirite might also be assisted with a conjunction of the bodies without offence to God or the worlde. But what? Why do I enter into termes of justice wyth hym, who is no way partaker of reason; and who is so suddaine and uncereteine in his enterprises, that he neyther takes advise afore he strike, nor useth leasure to delyberat or foresee the successe of any thing he beginneth? For as he is naked and without eyes, so is hee voyde of judgement, and unconstante in all his doings, assailinge commonly the hartes of suche as hee fyndes ydle and leaste occupied with vertue. Ah! spiteful disdayne of kynred, and unnaturall malice of a brother! In what sorte have I deserved this harde pennance at thy hande, to depryve me of the thinge wherin I tooke moste pleasure? Wherein hath the curteyse Livio offended the; if not that his honestie excedes thy rude disposition, and vertue giveth cause of shame to thy wicked will? Or, peradventure, thou disdainest his just merit; for that he is better favored in al companies

Love is naked,
and without
eyes.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

then thyselfe? And is it reason that thy consente confirme my affection? Why sholde my advancement depende upon thy good will; or the choice of my husbände aske counsell of thy consente? Shall I be subjecte to hym who hathe no authoritye over me but by an encrochement of yeres, for that he is the eldest son of my father? Hathe he any pryviledge that waye to govern my will, or geve lawes to my fancie? Nothinge lesse: for my father hath alreadie paste th'accorde betwene Livio and me. But you wyll saye, peradventure, "under a condicion." A simple article, I confesse; whiche also is of no force, if the partie bee voide of pretence or prejudice. And wherin shall it be prejudiciall or proffitable to him, if Livio be my husbände? Seinge it belongeth to my father to depart with my dowery and portion of mariage, and my husbände to dispose it without interuption, so longe as hee is a member of lyfe. What weakenes is this in a father to be governed whollye by the breath of his son (whose unjuste malice, rather then argument of reason, makes him renounce the worde of his honour) in a case touchinge the quiett and consolacion of her who ought to be no lesse deare unto him then her tyrannouse brother; who, when he hath exposed the uttermoste effecte of his spite, and that I am to be bestowed in an other place by his appointment, it shall appeare whether his commaundemente be as currante over mee then as his malice rageth without measure or reason at this present; protestinge by the height of the heavens that none other then hee to whom I have pawned my faieth, shall enjoye the chaste acquaintance of th'infortunat Camilla? No! Livio is myne, what wrong so ever they do to our vertuese love, whiche so longe as I live shal be indyssoluble in me; beinge redye, withall, to refuce no thinge that may advance the consummacion of the mariage betwene me and him, without whom I fele an ympossyblitie to live.' Wherewith her passion grewe to suche a vehemencie, that her laste wordes ended with the course of longer breathe; in such sorte that shee slyded suddainly from the seat wher she sate, and fell grovelinge upon the ground, resigning with a dollorous skryke the use of vitall ayre. Albeit the expedition of diligence in her

DISCOURSE

II

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE II woman procured with much ado a retorne of life ; and with such consolacion and offer of hope as shee colde preferre, shee won her to go to bedde ; where, albeit the viewe of the wronge and discourtesye of her brother seamed for a tyme to staie the course of sleepe, yet in the often repeticion of her sorowes appeared a litle of quiette, whiche closed her eyes, and cast her into a slomber, wherin she seamed to beholde standinge afore her th' ymage of her Livio, halfe deade, embracing her with a pale and hydeous regarde ; which forced her to suche a feare, that she brake suddainely oute of her dredefull sleape, spendinge the reste of the wearye nighte in pytifull complaints. Wherin certainly she had raison ; for that in that dreame, or rather misticall vision, was figured the desaster whiche not longe after overwhelmed them both. Neyther oughte wee to fynde it strang if th' apprehensions appearing in our slepe do geve us warninge of the good or evill happeninge unto us ; for that wee have certeine recordes which justefye the same in the person of one, Brutus, hee whiche was vanquished in the feldes of Pharsalemo (whether he were awake or in the depthe of his sleepe) seamed to see in his tente a terrible shappe of a certaine sprite pronouncinge his overthrow. Besides th' authoritye of naturall reason movethe us to confesse that, as the ympression of a greate feare, or longinge desyer of any-thinge, do presente often tymes affore the eyes of our mynde (the bodie beinge in reste) the ymage of that whiche we love or feare ; so also the sprit that is voyde of passion, or at point to fall into some perilous accident, encountreth commonly in his sleape the thinge which hee wisheth not to happen, and abhorreth to remember when his eyes have dismissed the drowsy humour of slepe. For Camilla desired nothinge lesse then the death of her Lyvio ; and yet, not longe after the presage or forewarninge of her dreadefull vysion, she only witnessed the effect, assistinge his funeral with her presence in the tombe, as wel as she was willynge to admit his companie in the secret bedd of their infortunat mariage. Livio, for his part, was not voide of passion on the behalfe of the frowarde successe of his busynes. Albeit, seinge he colde no way bribe the good will of fortune, hee

Brutus
warned of his
overthrowe in
his sleepe.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

II

resolved to geve place to her presente malice, and in attending the benefytt of a better tyme, to practise Claudio by circumstance and mediation of his neare frendes. Albeit, felinge in the meanwhile an intolleracion of love, with conynuall increase of desier to coll the flower of his affection, and taste of the pleasant jewyste of the grape which quencheth the thirste of the loyall lover, he ymparted his paine and request to his ladye, in a letter of this substance: — ‘Seinge there is no justice, good ladye, to supporte the consent to your owne disquiet, and suffer me to lyve in passion without comparaisou, methinke you do wronge to th’indifferent contentment of us both. For if you desyer my death, you nede use no other minister for fatall execution then the alarams of dollor which I encounter daily by your meanes; but if you have care of my quiett, and greve no lesse with th’imposicion of my mortal torment, why make you suche conscience to yelde me consideration of the honeste zeale I beare you, seing the same dothe also ymporte a speciall contentment to yourselfe? You knowe what is alredie passed betwene us; neyther are you ignorante of the small respect your parentes use towards you. Wherwyth, if the mutuall consente conclude the mariage, you ought also to understande, that, neyther the tyrannye of the one, nor wante of corage in the other, hath power to wythholde you from that which you are bound to performe, nor hinder me to enjoye the benefytt of my desert. Wherin I appeale to the torch of your conscience, with request to consider in what sort you will advise mee, to th’ende that, by th’assistance of your councell, I maye the better carye over the greatnes of my extremetie; which, as it is divided into spedie releefe or presente dispaire; so, seinge I am of force to passe by the one, I doubt of which of the two to make my moste proffyt. For, albeit the firste hath power to performe the full of my felycity; yet, in attendinge th’effect, I consume in a flamé of burning desyer. And the other, if it ymporte a present abridgment of my tormente by untymely deathe, yet in the verye acte consists a spot of dishonour to myselfe, and an everlastinge surname of crueltie to her in whose ballance waigheth th’indyffrent

Lyvyo writeth
to Camilla.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE sentence of the lyfe or deathe of the moste desolate and
II loyall LIVIO.'

Camilla—whyche desired nothing lesse then to delay the desire of her servant, for that herselfe labored of the same disease—retorned the messengier with no other aunswer then that, at after dinner, she would visitt Cornelia ; when, also, shee wold satisfie his maister by mouth, for that she feared the subteltie of her brother wolde intercepte her letters. Where with th' infortunat Livio, not knowyng the thred of mischiefe which Fortune was now spynnyng for him, entred into such solace that the chamber wherein he walked seemed to litle to conteine hys present gladnes ; the rather for that he ymagined that hys mistresse woulde now dismysse all excuses and impedimentes to th' effect of hys longe desyer, scyng there wanted nothyng to consummate the mariage, but solemne publicacion. In whiche passion of joye, he supplied the tyme in attendinge the commynge of his ladye with singyng and softe musicke ; accordyng to the nature of the swan, who, the nearer she draweth to the ende of her destiny, the pleasanter note she synges, bathinge and pruninge herselfe in the purest streame she can fynde, to th' ende to do honor to her funerall fate. And as he ymagined thus to be at the point to arrive in the suburb of his paradise, behold ! the approche of the goddesse of his devocion and deare mistres Camilla, with her chambriere, who, as she was alreddie privye to the whole practise, so she used her companie nowe to avoyde suspicion, imparting the same to Livio, to th' ende he nede not distruste her presence, yf by chaunce they entred into parley touchyng any secret matche where neded not th' assistance of manye wyttnesses.

And being thus in armes together, God knoweth if anye sorte of kysses or other follies in love were forgotten ! Wherin, as it is a common experience that neither bytt nor bridle is hable to governe the furye of love when we be at point to enjoye the pleasures we desyer, so there appered suche an indifferent vehemencie of appetit between them, that at th' instant they made plat or begynnyng of that whiche the same evenyng gave ende to the pleasure and lyfe of

The proprietie
of the swan
beinge neare
her deathe.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

theym both. Wherof, Camilla, as more hoate in desyer, or lesse hable to beare the burden of her burnyng affection, prevented the request of Lyvio, and made plaine the first entrey and path to both their mishappes, saying that, 'for as much as our consentes have concluded a mariage, and that in the breache of our promise appeareth a perentory prejudice to our consciences, that we seale th'articles of the contract wyth a full consommacion of the secret ceremonies in mariage; bothe to take awaye all occasion of offence, and also to mortifye the malice of my brother, maugre his harte. Wherin,' sayth she, 'beinge fully persuaded of youre consente to my proposition, and for that in cases of love delayes and longe consultation bee hurtefull, and sturre up causes of displeasure to the hartes of suche as be striken with the same disease—wherof the contrarye, the reste of oure humaine affaires require a maturitie of councel, to th'ende the successe may aunswer the expectation of the parties—so I wishe you to attende the benefyt of time this evenyng: I meane, at the hower of supper, when men are gyven leaste to suspicion, you faile not to come in as secret maner as you can to the gardeine gate, wher my woman shal be readye to conveyge you into my chamber, to th'ende we maye there take advise of that which we have to do.' Wherunto Livio was not curious in consent, and lesse unmindeful to yelde her the choice of a thousande thankes for offringe the priviledge which he doubted to demaunde; givynge her assuraunce to use suche exact wisdom in the conveyghe of so secret a misterie, that Argus himselve, if he were upon earth, shold not descrye his comming, and much lesse any be pryvve to the daunce but such as performed the rounde. Wherin he was not deceaved; for as he was the firste, so shee failed hym not at the cloase, and bothe theyr miseries of equall qualitie in the ende. Like as it happenethe often times that those amarous bargaines redoundes to the harmes of suche as bee the parties; who, albeit, do alledge a certaine respect of honestie in theyr doinges by pretence of mariage, yet God, beinge the judge of their offence, will not suffer the wronge to the obedience of their parentes in concludyng pryve contractes unpunished, and that wyth suche a penance as the

DISCOURSE

II

Delays be
hurtefull in
cases of love.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE II remembrance is notorious in all ages. But now to our Livio, who, neyther unmindeful of the hower, and lesse forgetfull to kepe appointment, attyreth himselfe for the purpose in a nighte gowne girt to hym, with a paire of shoes of felte, leaste the noyse of his feete shoulde discover his goinge; and, for a more honor of his mistres, he forgat not his perfumed shyрте, spidered with curious braunches accordinge the fansie of his ladye, with his wrought coyffe poudred with diverse drogues of delicat smell. Wherewith, he stealeth in as secret maner as hee can to the gate of appointment, where he founde the guide of his love; whome hee embrased, as well for the service hee founde in her, as also in that she resembled the beautye of his mistres Canylla, who, after she had taken her nightes leave of her father and brother, with search that every man was in his place of reste, retireth to her chamber with such devocion as commonly they that fynde themselves in semblable jorneye to worke th' effect of such like desir; where, encountering her infortunat servant, it was concluded to imploye no time in vayne reverence or idle ceremonies, but in a moment they entred their fatal bed together; where, after certaine amarous threates, and other folyes in love (servyng as a preamble to the part they ment to playe) Livio entred into the unhappye pageant of his fatal and last pleasure. Wherin he chaffed himselfe so in his harnesse, and was so greedie to cooll the firste flower of the virginitic of his Camilla, that, whether the passion of joye prevailyng above the force of the hart, and th' inner partes, smothered with heate, coulde not assiste th'enterprise accordyng to their office, or that he exceeded nature in surfettinge upon his pleasant banquet, hee founde himselfe so sharplye assayled wyth shortnes of breath, that his vitall forces began to faile him in the midst of the combat. Like as not longe since it happened to Attalus, the cruell king of the Hunes; who, in the firste nighte of his infortunat mariage in Hungarye, enforced himselfe to so greate a corage in the pleasaunt encounter wyth hys newe wyfe, that hys dead bodye (founde in her armes the nexte mornynge) witnessed his excesse and glottenouse appetit in the skirmishe of love. Whyche also myghte bee the bane of thys

The kinge of the Hunes died in the excesse of pleasure with his wife the firste nighte of their mariage.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

Livio; who, respectyng no measure in drinkyng of the delicat wyne, no more then yf it had bene but one banquet dressed for hym in the whole course of his lyfe, was so over charged with desyre in that pleasaunt skirmishe, that the conduites of lyfe, stoppyng upon a soddaine, barred to adde fourther strengthe to hys gredye appetyt. Whereupon, he became without mocion or feelinge in the armes of Camylla; who, feelyng hym without sence, and that he seamed more heavy and rude upon her then affore, dowed a trothe; wherin, also, she was fully satisfied by the lyght of the candle, which she caused her chamberiere to bringe to the bedde syde; where, vewyng the dead bodye of him whom she loved no lesse then herself, and judgyng the cause as yt was in deede, entred ymedyatly into suche a mortall passion of dollour, that, albeyt she woulde have exposed some woordes of compassion on the behalfe of the pytefull accident, yet, feelyng a generall dymynucion of force thorowe all her partes by th'ynundacion or waves of soddaine sorowe, she founde her tonge not hable to supplye the desyer of her hart, whych, wyth the consent of the reste, loathyng the use of longer lyf, resigned her borrowed tearme to the fates; fallyng at th' instant without sence or feelyng upon the dead body of hym whom shee accompted a dutie to accompanie in the other worlde, as well as she delyted in hys presence duryng their mutuall aboade in thys miserable valey. A happye kynde of deathe, yf wee had not to consyder the perill whyche attendes suche wretches as, having no meane to performe th' effect of their pleasure but by unlafull stealthe, are so franke for the shortnes of their tyme, that, in satisfyng the glot of their gredye appetit, they make no conscience to sacrificise ther owne lyfe. But yf wee passe furthe in the viewe of these offences, we shall fynde a derogacion of the honour and integretye of the mynde, with a manifest prejudice and hazarde to the healtie of the sowle: whyche makes me of opinion, that yt is the most miserable ende that maye happen to manne; the rather for that the chyefest thyng whyche is regarded in the pursuet of that enterprise, is to obeye the sommance of a bestely and unbridled luste of the fleshe. Wherein I wishe oure frantike

DISCOURSE

II

Livyo died of the like, in the armes of his Camilla.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE II lovers, whoe (makyng contemplacion uppon causes of love) accomptes yt a vertue to ende their lyves in thys lascivius bonde of pryvye contract, to refrayne that whyche is so indifferent hurtefull bothe to the sowle and body; seyng theire death is not onely without argument of desperation, but also their sowles moste sewer to receive the guerdon of civil morder; whyche we oughte to feare and eschewe as neare as wee can, afore the sequestration of the earthelye substance from the part of divinitie whych wee partycipat with God. And what contentement or glorye soever they reappose in thys monstrous abrydgement of nature, reprehendynge them of desloyaltie whyche do the contrarye, yet their acte merites none other name then the title of brutalitie; neyther can I thinke but their opynion is guided by some sprite or humor of frantye follye. Lyke as yt is not the part of a Christian (as the Appostle affirmeth) to prefer the fyckle pleasures of the flesh, whych are of shorter moment then the thoughtes of a man, afore the feare of God, recke of our life, and care to present our sowles without spot afore the troane of mercie in the daye of generall accompte, when all thoughtes shal bee deciphered and no falte unpunshed.

The poore girle-of-the-chamber to the dead Camilla, seyng thys fatall misterye, wyth the distresse she was in for that she was a companion of the conspiracye, thinkyng to give ende and playe the laste acte of the tragedye, serched about the chamber for some glave, or sword, or other thinge apte to make the minister of her bloody intent. And, being deceaved that way, she had no other meane to playe doble or quit, but with impetuosity of dollor. Wherein, she raged with such dolefull skryches, that the brute of her complaint awaked the whole house. Whereof, the firste that entred the chamber of funerall was the tyraunt Claudio; whoa, albeyt was th'only cause of this dolorous massacre, yet, in place of confessyng his falte, or yelding sorow to the losse of such ii loiall lovers, he grewe in more rage by the viewe of the dead body of Livio. Whereof, as he would willingly have committed a newe morder, saving that he sawe him without respiration are argument of lyfe, so, his anger being torned into wodnes, and rage into furye,

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

he wreaked his collar upon the poore girle; to whome he gave iii or iiii estockados with hys dagger thorowe the bodye, and slonge ymediatlye oute of the chamber, to the greate amaze and terroure of hys unfortunat father, who, seyng his house full of morders, and hys sonne committed oppen slaughter in the person of the innocent gyrlle, coulde not so governe his passion of dolour but he seemed more ready to passe that waye then desyrous to enjoy longer life. Albeit, beyng kepte from doynge force agaynst himselfe by certayne hys servantes that were there, he uttered som part of hys inwaerde gref by open exclamation agaynst hys owne misfortune, inveighynge chyeflye agaynst the inordinat will of hys daughter, with advise to all fathers to kepe a steddye eye upon their slypprye youthe. Wherein, he commended unto theym the example of hys owne follye in favouryng so much the fonde appetit of hys daughter that he gave leave to her libertye to excede the viewe or persewte of his eye; accusyng chieffie the impedymnt he gave to the mariage, seyng that in the same appeared the perentory ruin of hys house, continuall desolation to hys olde veres, and in the ende to leave hys goodes and lyvynge to straungers for want of an heire of his bodye. For that, havynge but ii children, the one was already dead, and the other no lesse worthe, by the mortall violence he had used upon the innocencie of the mayd; who, after that surgeants had somewhat stayed the bledynge of her woundes, confessed the contract and circumstance of the love, whereof you have harde a particular declaracion. Whiche rather increased the dule of th' olde man then gave moderacion to his sorowe; whyche, notwithstandinge, by the perswacions of hys neighbours, and constraint of necessity (whych as a vertue giveth pacience perforce to all extremities) he dysmissed in outward showe, and disposed hymself to the funerall obsequies in as solemne manner as he cold; erectynge a tombe of marble in Sainct Francys' church, wherein were shryned the bodies of the ii lovers, as dead at one time and by one occasion, to the greate regreat of the whole towne: wherein, everye one was so indifferentlye passioned wyth sorowe, that a man should hardly have hard any other

DISCOURSE

II

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE II tunes then publike exclamacion against the crueltie of Claudio. By whyche generall complaint, together with the depositions of the mayde (who dyed within three dayes after her hurtes), Dom Ramyro Catalano, governor of Cesenna under Cesar Borgia, began to enter into tearmes of compassion of the behalfe of the ii dead lovers and mortall anger against Claudio; for that his cruelty was the cause of the death of the ii only flowers and peragons in Italy. Wherin, he purseued so vehemently the rigour of his office and equity of justice that Claudyo lost his head secretly within the castel, for feare of mutine or tumulte of his frendes.

This was the miserable ende of the love and lif of the ii Sisennois; wose death and discorse of amarous traffique, for that it doth not exceed the remembrance of our time, I have presented as a familiar example affore the eyes of our youth, to th'ende that every one, respecting the duty of his own indevor, may use the misery of this precedent as a paterne to prevent the like myschief in themselves. Wherin, also, as we may note that love is but a rage or humor of frantike follye, derived of ourselves, and converted to our owne harne by th'indiscrecion that is in us, so the nexte remedy to withstand that furye is to encounter him under th'enseigne of raison, and flee the occasions whyche weaken the mynde wythout travell and bringe the bodye in the ende to the theatrye of execution. Wee are also warned here to temper the delites wee possess with suche measure that, forgettynge the blyndenes of Livio, we maye eschewe the horroure of hys acte, with detestation of the folye he used in the glott of his unlawfull pleasure.

DISCOURSE

III

A YONG LADY in MYLAN, after she had longe abused the vertue of her youthe and honour of maryage with an unlawfull haunte of divers yonge gentlemen, becoms an unnaturall morderer of the frute of her wombe, for that shée was forsaken of hym who gatt her wyth Chylde.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE III

THE ARGUMENT

ACCORDING to th' oppinion of the wise Demosthenes, there is no one vertue that hath made more famous the fathers of former time thenne the gyft of cyvill curtesy, neyther is nature more glorified in the ympes of her creation then in that we dispose our selves and doings according to the disposition of the clymat whiche shee hath appointed to governe our accions and thoughtes; respecting chiefly to refraine from violacion of innocent blodde, which in al ages hath restored a name of great clemencie to diverse, albeit, touching other effectes, they were amb;cius tyrantes, and cruell enemyes to their owne commonwealthe. Whiche unnatural crueltie, also, as it hath bene, and is, of such detestacion amongst the rudest companions of the world, that the verye barbarians have alwaies had in horror the wickednes of suche as pursewed the queste of guiltles blodde, and toke away the life of him that had not committed offence, so they have alwaies had in honour the vertue of suche as soughte to extirppe the roote of tyranical furies borne for the ruine and destruction of man; like as, among the Romaine emprouers, Nero, Calygulus, and Commodus; amongst the straung nacions, Phalaris, Alexander, Phereus, Dyomedes, and the cursed Nunnylsyntha, Quene of Thracia, who, after she had miserably murdered an ynnocent mother, committed semblable crueltie upon the childe within her bellye. Wherof, albeit the horror was greate, yet was it nothinge in respect of the hellishe acte of a lady of oure tyme, happyninge not in the Antropophogans, Scythya, or amongeste Canybales or Amazones, aunciente murderers of their children, but in the harte and middest of Europe, and in one of the most faire and riche provinces of the world; where aforetime hath bene kepte an *Academia* or generall scoole to instructe all nacions for the honeste and vertuous direction of their lives, but of late was founde there a gentlewoman, degeneratinge frome th' instincte of her secte, which exposed effectes of more crueltie thenne earst hath bene noted by any writers of any age: wherof the discourse followethe at large.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES



HAVINGE then to treat upon tragicall affayres, procedynge of unnaturall luste, with lasyvius disposition, the only maister pocke and chief fountayne from whence distylleth all poysned humors of infection, overflowinge at lengthe the channel of his quiett cours with unrewele waves of inordinat cruelty, I meane here to presente unto you the trewe pattore of a seconde Medea, in the person of a yonge ladye, borne and wantonlye bredd up in the ryche and populus cytie of Mylleyne; whom, bycause myne author seames to christen by a contrary tytell, to avoyde all occasions of myslykes whiche other ladyes (bearinge the lyke name) myght unjustly fall into by the lavishe mouthes of the malcyous sorte, I think it good also to passe under tearmes of lyke scylence her parentes and husbände, to th'ende that their vertue (merytyng a better mede then to beare the blame of the detestable lyfe of there wycked daughter) come not also in question amongst such *diabolos* as have their tounge always typped with the mettall of malcyous slaunder. This Pandora then (borowinge her name of the qualytye of her unchaste and crewell conversacyon) gave manyfest signes, during the tyme of her infansye, of her future disposition, arguinge the poysined clymatte, whiche, firste gettynge domynion over the yonge yeares of her grene understanding, dyirected after the whole seaquel of her life by the dyal of a cursed constellation, makinge the latter remaynder of her yeres subjecte to a thousande ylls and perentory inconveniences. For she was disdaynfull without respect, spytefull without measure, honge altogether full of the fethers of folyshe pryde, so whollye gyven to wallowe in dilycarie that she detested al exercises of vertue, and so drowned in the fylthye desyre of the fleshe that, afore shee had attayned to the full of fortune yeres, she became such a banqueroupte of her honour that a poore page, the sonne of a simple artyficer, norvshed

Badde argument in a yong woman.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE in the house of her father for charitie sake onely, crept so farr into her creditt, that, with small sute, hee gayned the use of the ile whiche ought to bee invincyble in unhoneſt ſorte. Wherin, notwithstandinge, after hee hadde once rampppyred himſelfe, fyndinge the ſoyle no leſſe fertyle then to be tyllled with eaſye travell, he founde, alſo, no leſſe famylyarytie in the owner; who feaſted him ſo frankly with the pleaſaunte jeweſte and precious commoditie of her ilande, not earſte inhabyted by ſtraungers, that his common exerciſe was to kepe her companie every night alone in her chamber, leaſte the Leutyngs and daungerous bogbeares, appearinge by viſions in the night, ſhoulde put her in feare, or kepe her from ſleape. This was one chiefe delyght wherin ſhe toke pleaſure in the prime time of her age, an undoubted kalender, ſuer, of the noble actes to be expected in this ympe as her yeres grewe to greater nomber, and her deſier of more maturitye. Which wicked exerciſe is ſufficyent of itſelfe to untye the tunges of bacbyters, ſtyrringe up the malyce of certeine *Pololugos*, redye alwayes upon one ſimple occaſion, or for the falte of one, to reprehende the honour of all dames, if the vertue of you chaſt ladyes weare not only hable to confute all their ſuborned reaſons of reproche, but alſo, by the cleare integrety of your converſacion, to charme the mouth of the ſlaunderer from inveyghinge ſyniſter meanes agaynſte anye of the noble ſecte femenyne, ſo muche commendable and to bee honored of all men. This yonge pupill and prentyſe of Venus, although ſhee lystned with ſmall trayninge to the lewre of Cupido, yet uſed ſhee, notwithstandinge, ſuch care in the conveyghe of her folyes that the beſt eyes in her fathers houſe weare to blynd to beholde the amorous traffique which paſſed betwene the page and her; neyther was ſhe doughted (where ſoever ſhee came) to be preferred to the firſte place in the bedroll of pewer virgins; although (as you have hard) ſhe had payd the fyrſte frutes of her virgynytye to one no leſſe unworthy of th' offering then to enjoye the poſſeſſion of ſo deare a jewell, beinge already vowed to another by them that by moſt ryght ought to diſpoſe of it. And Her parentes. who maye ſee here as in a glaſſe their greate neglygence and

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

III

lyttle care in th'education of their children, preferringe rather to pamper them in pleasure, wyth to large a skope in lybertye (the chieffeste meane to seduce yonglyngs not yet confyrmed in rypenes of discession) then to restrayne th' appetyte of ther foolyshe will; whiche doth not onely make them bodyes subjecte to all sensuall prostytucion, but also subvertes the honor of their whole house wherof they toke there begynninge. This Italian impe and honest Pandora, wearye even nowe of the companye of her page—who, be-lyke, was not hable to quenche the luste of his unsaciabie mystresse—began, with famylyer glaunces of her eye and other secret regardes of good wyll, to practyse a seconde league of societie, concludinge a newe bargayne of love wyth a yonge gentyman, lustye and likelye everye waye to performe th'expectacion of her desyre; who, also, for his first endeavor, founde the meanes to corrupt her governess with certeine peces of golde, armes (suer) sufficient enoughe of themselves to batter the walls of the strongest and beste defended fortresse that this daye is under the pole of heaven; which, also, was the kaye (as the poetes fayne) that opned Jupiter the dore of the brazen tower wherin the fayre Danae, daughter of Acrises, was curiously enclosed. This second lover, thinking to cooll the firste flower of the maydenhed of Pandora (beinge yet scars xvi yeres of age) began to doubt of the case when hee founde the waye alreadye beaten, and the entrie so easye without resistance. Albeit, contentinge himselfe with his present fortune, beinge dryven notwithstandinge to drinke the lees of the vessel which the page had gaged to his hande, and sucked out the sugred jewse of that grape, he fayled not to court her with a contynuall haunte of his companye, in suche sorte that his chiefe exercise and tyme was employed in the supplye of her gredy desyre; untill at laste, beinge cloyed for want of change of dyotte, or wearye with so longe huntinge one kynde of chase, or (peradventure) not hable any longer to mainteyne the skirmysh for want of fresh supplyes, he began to suborne divers meanes to purchase his departure. Wherin, with th'assystance of a fewe fayned importuntytes, hee prevayled only with this excuse, that, being captayne of

Money is hable to batter the strongest fortresse under heaven.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE certeyne bands of footmen, it behoved him (he sayde) for
III greate respectes, to visitte his charge with expedicion. Wherewith, with small sute, hee gatte leave and wente his waye, resigning the forte whiche hee had so long battered, to the guard of an olde and rich gentyelman dwellinge in the same cytie; who, doatinge more upon the bewtie of Pandora thenne notinge deligentlye her disposition, maryed her, after longe intercession to her frendes: a mache farr unmete considering th'inequalitee of their yerres. For he, bearing the burden of fifty winters upon his backe, his former moysture and strength converted into watrye humors of weaknes, scars hable to sustayne nature, who at those yerres, also, sommons all men to declync, seamed farr unhable to encounter in singler combate with her, that had not yet sene th'uttermost daye of eyghtene yerres. Albeit being maried, although his lott was to take other mennes leavings, yet he myslyked not his choyse; but being mounted upon a common hackney, he thought himselfe well horsed, and as one not very scrupulous, or lyttell skylled in suche kind of housekeping, he toke her for a pure virgyn: a thinge not much to be merveyled at, seinge the daily accedentes in the like affayres, and speecially the subtyll charmes and sundrie legerdemaynes, wherof such *Dermoptera* or letherwynged huswyves, as Pandora, have no small store, to cover their faultes, and make theym seme maydenlike (although they have alreadie playd the dydopper) that the clearest eyes had nede of spectacles, and the wiseste wyttes want sleight, to dyserne their conning. And now this newe maryed dame, gettinge firste the upperhande of her olde husbände, made her seconde endevore to have the whole conveygh of all the househoulde doinges, whereby her commaundement was only currant, and she, houldinge the rayne of her lybertie in her owne hand, mighte haunte and use what place for recreacion she lyste at her pleasure. Neyther forgatt she so to brydel Goodman Hornsbye (her husbände) with obedience, that, without his controlmente or suspicion, Monsieur le Page (who gave the firste penie of her honestie) had free accesse unto her chamber, wher he paide his own arreages, and also helped to supply the colde corage of the olde knight;

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

who, as he rather encreased her appetyte then satisfied her desire, so his good wil, peradventure, was more then his power hable to perform. And as the page had thus eftsones placed himselfe in the possession of his former pray, it chaunced that a yong gentillman, banished from Rome for certeine forged conspiracies incensed against him, fled to Myllan; wher, lodging right over the pallais of Pandora, beheld easely the amorous gleees of his neighbour, who toke singuler pleasure to be requited with the like regards; and seing her fayre, yong, and disposed to al recreacions of pleasure, began to profer her love, first by the pitifull regarde of his countenance, painted full of arguments of dule, and after by certenie secrete sighes declaringe (after th' Ytalyan maner) the ardent flame of affection, not ceassing continuallye to burne his harte in the desier of her bewtie. And, omittinge no meane which mought move her to take compassion of his peyne, hee forgat not to passe divers times afore her lodginge, with a lute or other musicke of soft melodie; wherunto, also, he accorded his phyled voyce with notes of pleasant twne, and that with suche a grace of great delight that the swete noyse of his hermony seamed a thousand times of more entysinge melodye then the heavenly jonkinge of the nytyngal. Wherwith, in shorte tyme, he kyndled a fyre in the harte of this yong wanton, toward whome he nedde not have used such cyrcumstance or longe ceremonye, seinge that of herselfe (if his sute had not intercepted her) shee had prevented his meaninge in takinge upon her th'office of the clyent, beinge onlye geven to raunge and ravyn for the satisfyinge of her inordynat luste, desyrous to chaunge her acquaynted soyle for the freshe harbage of grene pasture. Wherwith, one eveninge (her husbande beinge from home) this Romain lover, called Candidio Iocundo, made his walke in solemne maner under her chamber wyndowe, playing of his lute with a voyce of suche masquid musycke, myngled with outewarde showes of dolor in his face, and poudred fynely with sundrye syghes of pityful disposition, that it seamed of suche straunge operation to the harte of Pandora, beinge alreadye throughly daunted with the desyre of him that soughte but to deceyve

DISCOURSE
III

The order of
a fearefull
lover in dis-
closing his
affection.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE III her, that, beinge nowe no lenger hable to kepe her eares shutt from the voice of the crafty charmer, desired him to enter. Wherunto (as the subtill fouler, pyping all the daye in the bottom of the hedge tyll he hath allewred to his bushe the birde hee chieflie desyreth) he agreed, I am sure, with more contentment of the offer then dyfficultye to be entreated. And, being arived in the haven of his desyre, God knoweth with what devocion they offered to the goddesse of pleasure, celebrating the banquet with all dyshes of dylcacye. Wherwith th' ympudente Pandora forgat not to feaste him so frankly with shamefull encounters on her parte, that, with lyttell sute and lesse intreatye, he entred commons in the place whiche the olde John thought to be reserved severall to himselfe, and with small conyng gave her checkmate that stode slenderlye upon her garde, lothyng even now her incontinencie that so easelye yelded her honestie in praye to whosoever woulde pursue it. Wherin, certeynly, he had good reason. For, of al the degrees of unhappye creatures, that, without the consente of womanlye shame, do wykedlye transgresse the sacred lawe of chastitye, they ought chieflie to use some respect of honestye, that are admitted into the inviolable order of matrimonye; and if their desteny be incident to so evil a fortune as to enter into societie with a secret frend besydes their husbände (a thyng notwithstandinge forbidden by the worde of God, and lesse tollerable by the possytive lawes of the worlde) yet ought they (I saye) be so confirmed in theyr unlawfull affection towarde their second pewmate, that their amitye maye seame of perpetuitye and without chaunge; neyther ought they be so carelesse in the choyse of their extraordinary consort as their own doings afterwards may make them worthelye to be laughed at. Which, indede, is the just reward for such as seme so ligt of their seale that they shott of without eyther mache, flint, or powder; and of whose folyshe and unshamfull lyghtnes, procedes the argument of so many comodies and enterludes played in open stage—not so much to the confusion of themselves and parentes, as open scandall to their husbands and houses for ever. Wherof the familyer example is to be noted in the

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

sequel of this Pandora, who was not only in short time utterly detested of that Romain, but also a common jesting-stocke, and pointed at, by his meanes, of al men, for her rashe familiaritye used towards hym; who, not long after the fyrst foundacion of this frendship, was cald home from exile by Leo de Medicis, their soveraigne vycar of the Sea of Rome, perdonyng his offence, and restorynge the use of his former lybertye. At whose departure (unlooked for) Pandora entred into no small passion of dolour, not for any fervent affection or love whiche she bare to her Romain frende, but because his sodaine goinge awaye lefte her voyde of all lycours to quenche the burnyng flame of the gredy goote of her unnatural concupiscens; and chiefly because Monsieur le Page began, also, to waxe cold in the combat whiche he had wonte to maintayne wythe suche courage. But Fortune here was so friendlye to the fulfyllinge of her licencious appetit, that she (styring up a freshe supplie of her desyre) presented in the listes a yong knight of Myllan called Cesar Parthonope; who, by chaunce, hyryng the lodging of the late Romain succeeded hym also in desyre and diligence. For he, at the fyrste vewe, regardyng the flateringe beautye of this Alcynes Her bewtie. his neyghbour, suffered himselfe unadvisedly to slyppe into the snares of love, honoryng that in his harte with true sinceritie as a deare jewel whiche his predecessour worthelye hated wythe dewe detestacion. And entryng here into the pagant of love, his firste was to gyve som outwarde arguments of his inwarde affection, wherin he began to make many pale-walkes afore her gate, rovyng wyth his eyes at her chamber-windowes (accordyng to the amorous order of the vayne Spanyard) utteryng, by the dolefull vewe of his troubled countenance, the greate and secrete desyre quarelyng inwardlye wyth his unrulye thoughts. But what? Nede a man use polycie wher slender sufe wyll pre-vayle? Or who wyll bend his battery to that fortresse, wherof the captayne demaundes parly, and sues for composition? And, besides, when the vaile of shame is once removed from our eyes, what let is there to stayer the sensual course of our bestly appetits? And they that suffer the raide of reason to slacke, or wholly to slip out of their hands, semes

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE III as transformed in a moment, and so weakned touching the lively mocions and forces of the spirit, that the exterior provocacions and appetit of desyre prevails wholly above the inwarde resistance and accions of the soule. Lyke as this glotton and impudent Pandora; who, seing her somtimes saluted with a pleasant eye of her new neighbour, forgot not to requit him with such wanton glaunces, and of suche open understandynge, that the knyght, dowbtynge not of the successe of his interprise, assured himselfe alredy of the victorye. Wherin he was somewhat holpen by the hand of fortune; who, providing a jorney for the husband of Pandora, touchinge th'execution of a commission in a forein countrye, kept hym absent in those affaires the space of a yere or more. Wherin, Parthonope forgot not to use th'opportunitye of so convenient a time; and being ignorant withal of the greate libertie of his mistres—who drew him on al this whyle by fine traines, to th'end to make him more eager of bit—had no waye to unfold the cause of his passion but by a letter, which he made the messenger of his grefe and solicester of his desyre in this sorte:—

Parthonope
writteth to
Pandora.

‘The curious Artificer and coninge worke-woman Dame Nature, I see wel (good madam) was not so careful to worke you in her semelic frame of all perfections, as the powers divine and disposers of the daungerous and loftye planets (assisting her endeavour with certaine peculier ornaments of their speciall grace) weare redye to open their golden vessell of precious treasur, powring by great abundance their heavenly gifts upon you, striving (as it semes) whiche of them for th'increase of his glory shold dispose himself most liberally on your behalf. Like as (according to the poetes) they contended of olde for the adorning by several ornaments the late Pandora, whom, for all respects, they agreed to be the odd ymage of the world, but specially for beautie; which if it dazeled the eyes of the gods, shining as a twinkling starr in th'elements above, yours I thinke was reserved as a torch of glistring flame to give light to the creatures of the midel world. Wherof (for my part) vewing with to ardent affection the sundry celestial ornaments imparted to you by

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

III

the gods, with the percinge beames of rare beautie gyven you for your dowrie of Nature, I doubt whether mine eyes (dimmed altogether with admiracion) wil first crie out for the losse of their former sight, or my whole bodie (plunged in the passion of affection) wil accuse the heart with the rest of th'inwarde senses for consentinge so easely to cause of their disquiet: wherin my lyfe wayeth indiferentlye in the ballance of a thousand annoyas, and mine auncient libertie, in the meane whyle, kept close in an extreme captivitee. Albeit, measuring your heavenly shape, with th'utwarde showe of singuler curtesye that semes to occupye al your partes, I can not resolve of any crueltie to consiste in you; neither can I judge (by the argument of your beauty) but that my captivitee shal be spedely converted into a happie deliverie; like as, also, my hope half assureth me, triumphinge with honor over the doubtfull object of my thought, to tast at your hands of the pleasaunt frutes of the thinge I chiefly desyre: which is (in accepting me as your servant and secret frend) to admit me into such place of pitye, as the dewe merit of my unfayned service deserves by justice. Wherin your act shal seme no lesse meritorious afore the throne of the hyghe goddesse, then honorable wyth generall fame for ever in the worlde, for relevynge him, who, without your assistance (being wholly transformed to th'appetite of your wyll) fyndes the burden of lyfe of suche uneasye tolleracion, that the leaste repulse of his sute at your hands, imports his fatal summonce, to resigne the tearme of his borrowed yeres in this worlde. Neither doth he desyre to have the fruicion of his earthly dayes any lenger, then employe the same withal humilitie in the service of you; whome his hart hath alredy pronounced the soverain ladye of his lyfe, wherof, you only maye dispose at your pleasure. —Your unfayned

CESAR PARTHONOPEE.'

Whiche letter he delivered unto his page, experienced alredye in the conveye of like affaires, who (accordinge to the sharp passion of his maister) used th'expedicion of time in the dispatch of his charge, whereuppon depended the recovery of his soveraine. But she being alredy (as you

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE

III

Of true love.

have hard) enamored of the knyght, who was the first that wooed her with arguments, felt even now, by the discours of this letter, such encrease of affection, pinching so extremly withe desyre to see him, that, without all order of womanly discrecion she imbraced the page in the behalf of his maister, gyvinge him this aunswere, to require his maister not to doubtte to come to her house. 'Wherof,' saith she, 'I also desier him, to th'end I may be resolved by the breth of his own mouth of that which I yet doubtte touching the report of the letter.' Wherin she preferred vehement importunities, shewinge the boye whiche waye he shoulde bringe hym to her chamber; 'where,' saith she, 'I wil attend his coming this evening.' Wherwith the page returned, discoursing point by point the successe of his embassage to the dolorous knight; who, revived by the gladsome newes of his boye, but chieflye by the shorte appointment resolved upon by his mistresse, cast of at th' instant th'apparell of dule, disposing himselve every waye to performe th'expectacion of the charge, committed unto him by the mouth of her whose commaundement he woulde not transgresse, though his lyfe should incurre the hazard of a thousand perilles. And putting himselfe in as seamelye order as he thought good, went (only with his page) in solemne maner to visit the saint; who was of herselfe more redye to graunt freelye then the pylgrym to demaunde by petition, and who, attending his commyng with more desier to ease the passion of the patient, in quenching the fervent rage of her unsaciabie appetit, then he for his part had cause to yelde adoration to so detestable a shryne, was withdrawn all alone into her chamber, where he founde her coyfed for the nonst onely in a nyghtgowne, and attire for the night redie to go to bed. Which, with the naturall shewe of her livelye beautye, set out to the most advantage by the shining light of the wax candels, drove the knight at the first into such astonishment, that the use of his spech was converted into scilence, and his eyes onely occupied in beholding the rare beauty of her who was utterly unworthie to weare so precious a jewell of nature. Albeit, expulsiug at last the fever of his dombe traunce, with kyssyng her white and delicat handes as his

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

firste entre into a further matter, proposed the cause of his comming in this sort:—‘I may, by good reason, accompt myselfe more in the favor of fortune, then any gentilman that ever was incident to any good hap, seing (good madam) that besides th’ assistance of the place, I am also preferred to a convenient meane to unfold unto you at large the smothered grieffe preserved hetherunto (to my great payne) in th’ utermost parte of my intrailles; whiche longe sins had sought a vent to burst out in open flame, if the dewe of the hope of that favor whiche now I finde in you, had not served as a necessary licour of comfort to delaye the raginge heat of the furnaise. For otherwise, good madame, I assure you, the smal experience I have to digest the bitter pylls of love, had offered my lyfe an untimely sacrificse to death. And nowe, seing by th’ intercession of fortune, and greate curtesie of your good ladyship, I am not only sprinkld with the water of new consolation, but also arived before th’ oracle to whom I have so long desyred to present the earnest penie of my humble service, I besech you (sayth hee) not without teares and sighes of pytifull disposition, open the windows of your pytye, and let fall the swete showers of compassion upon this torment, dealing so extremely with me without seassing: whiche, because you shal not thinke to be of lesse passion then the words of my mouth seme troubled in utteryng the secret sorow of my hart, looe! here I am become, in your presence, the pytifull solyciter of min owne cause.’ Wherewith Pandora, who hetherto had loved but only to satisfye her inordinat lust, and seyng with all th’ importunities of her clyent, all to be sprinkled with the teares of his eyes, requited him with like arguments of kyndnes; and feling now within her hart certain mocions assayling the secret of her thoughts with unfained affection towarde her loyall Parthonope, coulde not any lenger dissimull that which she chiefly desired, but imbracing hym with sundry signes of assured familiaritye, sayde unto him, more for maners sake then otherwise:—‘I marvaile, syr. that, being armed with so smale experience, you cane so clarkly discourers of th’ effects of love, whose misterves are not so plainly to be reveiled by anye, as by those that have taken degree in

DISCOURSE

III

Pandora
alloweth the
requeste of
her lover

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE

III

his skoole. And wel coule I impute that to your rashnes, whiche by your letters you have tearmed a crueltie in me; for your sute hath not ben of such continuance, as it may crave sentence in poste, nor your travaile so painfull as the reward ought to folow with suche hoat expedition. Albeit as you feele your owne hurt (not escapinge peradventure without some panges of affection,) so you must thinke the martyredom is not peculyar to one, but dividyng himselfe into a lyke *simpathia* of passion, hath wayed us both in th'indifferent ballance of affection. For if love hathe buylte his bowre in the botome of your harte, I must confesse unto you, syr, that I draw under the yoke of his awe, neyther is my torment anythyng inferior to yours. Wherof I had long (eare this) gyven you understandyng, by plaine practise, if the vaile of shame (a comen enemye to the amorous enterprises of us women) had not covered mine eyes, and closed my mouth with feare, that I durst never (whylest my husband was at home) caste forth suche baytes of the greate good will I have borne you, sins you weare our neighbour, wherby you might perceiue wyth what loyaltie I have chosen and adopted you th'only owner of my hart, and wyth whom I wishe to passe the remainder of my lyfe, with suche pleasure and contentement, as is necessary for the solace of twoe true lovers.' Whiche last wordes (for the more assuraunce of the bargaine) she forgot not to seale with sondry sortes of kysses and other homlye trickes of familiaritie, wherby the knight being absolutlye resolved of that whyche earste hee douted began to take possession of her mouth, adorynge her eyes wyth lookes of lovyng admiration, and, passyng in order to her whyt necke of the colour of the freshe lylie, came at laste to beholde her bare brestes, semyng lyke twoo litle hyls, or mountaynes, enviromyng a rosye valleve of most pleasaunt prospect, whiche he forgat not humbly to honor wyth the often print of his mouthe. And passyng some space in these amorous traffiques wyth a thousand other sleights of folye, wherof our vayne lovers have no lacke when they seme to dispute of pleasure wyth contentement of desyere, they entred the lystes of their singuler combat, in a faire feelde bed, redye

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

dressed for the purpose; where Parthonope, encounteringe his pleasante enemye wyth no lesse force and corage of his part then she had grounded experience to wythstande his malice in suche exploits, entred the breach, whych so many had made assaltable to his hande. And beinge in possession of the comen place of Pandora, she founde hym so valyaunt in th'affaires of her desyer, that in respect of the loftye corage of this newe champyon, she accompted al the rest but children that earst had traded wyth her in the lyke traffique. Wherefore, from th'instaunt, she gave him such assured place in her frendship, that hangynge wholly upon the shoulders of Parthenope, she had no quiet in her mind but when her eyes weare occupied in beholdyng his presence. Neither was he (for his part) voyd of lyke affection; for, beinge enchanted with the charmes of this venemous basile, he imployed his time to court her continually with his companye, defying al felicities in the world, but that which he semed to receive by the felowship of Pandora; to whom alon he yelded all devocion with great humilitie. But this pleasure, being of slipper continuance, stale awaye with the shortnes of time, their great amitie converted into indignacion and spitfull revenge. Yea! their mutuall societie, sealed with all assuraunce of affection in their harts, was, by and by, so separated and utterlye dissolved, that it was never hable to returne to his former unitye. For, sone after the league of this new frendship, behold the page, sumwhat refreshed by the absence of two or three monethes from his mistres, repaires to his olde exercise; wherin he founde no worse intertainment, at the bountifull hand of Pandora, then when he fyrst tyllid the soyle of so fertil an ile. Neyther woulde she for all this lose the company of her new champyon Parthonope, but, using the order of level coyle, she feasted them both indiferentlye of the dishes of one kynd of banquet, and reserved to herselfe a change of dyet at her pleasure. But the Myllannoys, notyng her disloyaltie, entred into divers disposition of collor, somtime determined, for the revenge of the wrong which he seamed to receive, to kyl his corrivall, and manifest by open publication th'inordinate lubricitie of his ladye. Whiche

DISCOURSE

III

Companion of
bed, or lieu
tenaunt.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE he had performed accordingly, if naturall curtesye, with the regard of the honor which he held, had not prevayled above his just cause of indignation in that behalfe. Wherin, albeit he dismissed the revenge, yet coulde he not escape th' extreme passion of jclousie; whych so prickt him at the quicke, takyng awaye his desier of reste, and, in place of th' appetit of slepe, filled his head full of hollowe dreames and vayne visions, being in short time so transformed with fantasie, that there rose question of his sodayne alteration amongst divers his familiar frendes; wherof one, called Eucyo Marciano, no lesse deare unto him by aproved frendshippe then by the lawe of faythfull allyaunce and auneyente dissente, who not ignoraunte in the maladye of his kynsman, disposed himselfe to cure the disease and mortefye the cause with one medicyne. And beinge whollye pryve to the practise of th' insacyable palliard Pandora, by the reporte of our late Romaine Iocunde, costed this knyght one daye as he walked all alone in a gallarye of his lodginge, reprehendinge his rashnes in this sorte:—'Yf I had as manye meanes to cure your disease (good cosin) as I am thorowlye perswaded of the cause of your sicknes, I woulde convert the grefe I fele in your behalfe into spedye endeavor to releve your distresse. Ah las! what unhappye trade of late have you entred into, that so removes your senses out of their sege of reason, transforming the livelye colloure of youre face into a complexion of palenes, youre minde continuallye occupied in solitarie thoughtes, and wholye chaunged into a disposition contrarye to your aunciente order? Do you thinke that I am eyther ignorante of your passion or of the league of love concluded of late betwene th' unchaste Pandora and you? Ah! good cosin, I lamente not so muche your presente desaster, as I feare the fal of future inconveniencs, like to thunder uppon you, if God prevente not the ylls which threaten you by takinge you out of the handes of that tyranous shee wolfe; whose poyson is of more perylous infection thenne that which dystilled from the breath of the fyrste Pandora, whom the two Greke poets do affirme to brewe the first vessel of venemous lycor that ever came into the world. Ah las! if reason would

Whore-
monger.

Marcyano
diswadeth his
frende from
Pandora.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

III

suffer you as wel to deserne the doinges and detestable life of this open hypocryt even from the yeares of her infansye, as your follye is content to leade you to lysten to her cursed lore, you would not onlye seme satisfied with the pleasure whiche hetherunto you have received, but also abhore the gredye apetyte of hers, so geven to hunte after contynuall change. Neyther dismaye you at all, if the pleasure whiche you count peculiar to your selfe, bee imparted to another, far unmete to mache with you in that or anye other condicyon. For he whom you suspect to supplie the place of your absence, was the fyrst that tilled the craggie grounde of your insacyable mystres, gathering the first frutes of her virginitye. Which, notwithstanding, might be dispensed withal by reasonable tolleracion, if the number of them (besides) weare not infynet, that have alreadye battered the fort wherof you thinke yourselfe lyvetenant and only possessor.' (Rehersinge here in order the bedroll of those that she had admitted for her unlawfull bedfelowes.) Wherof, Parthonope, bowing a willing eare to the tale of his kynsman, was dryven into no small merveile at the pretye discours of the noble actes of this valiant souldyer of Venus. But Martiano, although he sawe argumentes of remors in the hart of his cosin, yet he thought his disease was not utterlye cured unlesse the cause were also taken awaye: wherfore, pursuing his intent with vehement perswasions, he requested him at last to leave those traffyques of love, and speciallye in case of adultery. 'For' (saieth he) 'they do not only dimynyshe the honour, age, renome, and welthe of him that foloweth them, but also they are hurtefull to the health of the soule, forbydden speciallye by the mouthe of God. And for your parte (me thinke) it were better to marye sum honeste gentylwomanne of your own calabre, susteyninge the honor of your house with passing the rest of your yeres in mutual socyetye with your lawfull wife, then, in consuming the best time of your age, to depend wholly upon the pleasure of a shamelesse and commen doxeye; who, when she hath sucked out the grene jewse of your youth, will not stycke (I warrant you) to procure the ende of your dayes with some miserable and untimly death.

Callenge.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE III You are not ignorante, besides, I am sure, of the authorityes of divers histories, noting the great number of straung inconveniences, but specially perpetual infamy, which followeth as a dwe rewarde to their travel who, not regarding the dred commaundemente of God, and helthe of their soule, do defile the maryage bed of their neighbour, wherin for my part th'offyce of the frendshipe noryshed of long time between us, together with the respect of indissoluble consangwinytic, moves me, not only to expose my advice so liberally towards you, but also to present unto you this last request with semblable importunytye—that, as wel for the commoditie of your selfe as consolacion of those who wishe youre advancement, you wil abandon the haunt of this barrayn, and woman void of al vertue; whose wicked disposition argues many wayes to late a repentaunce for you, if in short time you dispatch not your hande of her acquaintance.' Wherwith, discharging the true part of a deare friend, he so conjured his kinsman, that, conferring his report with th'argument of lightnes he had alreadie noted in his mistres, he detested alreadie the remembrance of her beastly conversacion; and, because he woulde disclaime her acquayntance, companye, and effection which carst he bare her, at one instante he removed his lodginge to the further part of the cytie, where, within short time, he maryed a yong gentilwoman, daughter to one Eusebio Ioviall, no lesse vertuous, honest, chast, and curtuous, then the other prond, crewell, spightfull, and lascyvius; leaving, notwithstanding, his cast concubyn, Pandora, byg beliyed of his doing; who, noting not only his long absens from her, with the change of his lodging, but also that he was sodainly maryed, and she unaware of his intent, wrapte the colloricke humors whiche assayled her for the presente, in a letter; wherin she was no nigard to spytte franklye the poison of her stomake, in uttringe at large the conseys of her minde againste the disloyaltye of her perjured lover, as it pleased to tearme him. And being signed and sealed, she delivered it to a messenger convenient for the conveighe of suche embassage, with charg to performe the dispatch with expedition; which, accordnglie, was accomplished. For her

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

maide Fynea, who earst had bene collaryor in th' amorous affaires of Pandora, finding the knight in the companie of his kinsman Martiano, delivered him the letter of her mistris, importing this or the like effecte :—

DISCOURSE
III

‘The onlye experience of thy traiterous practise (Oh! Pandora parjured Parthonope!) is not only sufficient of it selfe to sturre uppe the juste exclamacions of al women againste the infidelitie in menne, but also hath sowenne suche seedes of perpetual slaunder in their attemptes of love hereafter, that thy desloyaltie towardes me (registred for ever in the remembrance of our secte) will hynder th’enterprises of others, whose intentes (tending peradventure to a more sinceritie of affection) deserve not to be repulsed by the merite of thy detestable falshod. And truly, for my part, I colde never have thoughte that faithe, purified thorowe the ryvers of so manye teares, confirmed by the witnes of a thousande sighes, and lastelye (for a more assuraunce) sealed with so manye othes, had had so smal harbor in the hartes of men now a dayes, if the profe of thy unhoneste dealinge had not argued it unto me with suche familiar example in myselfe that, alas! I curse (by good right) the constellacion that firste consented to my nativitie and unhappie procreacion, in sufferinge me to be governed by so harde a destynie, or deceived by the moste untrue and faithles sycophant that ever offred service to any pore gentlewoman. Albeit, if I had not bene so liberall to prostitute mine honoure for satisfyinge thy unchaste desyer, my conscience had bene easelye dispensed with all for the pennance of so greate a falte, my harte free from presente passion, and I apte enough to forgett the, whose stronge charmes of extreme love have so enchanted my senses, and made me subject to thy remembrance, that the small time of thy absence is no lesse grevous unto me, then thy presente abuse geves mee juste cause to crye oute openly of thyne inordinat crueltie. Alas! is this the guerdon of th’unfained love I bare the? Is thy disposition so unnaturall, to retorne the precious meritte of mine honoure with so unthankfull a meede of undeserved discourtesye? Have I loved the so entierlie, pre-

Pandora
writeth to
Parthonope.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE

III

ferringe the moste deare above all men in th'intralls of my harte, to be deprived of thy companie when I expect to reape the frutes of pleasure with everlastinge contynuance of our societie? Must I now abandon the fruicion of thy presence, being whollie resolved in thy affection, and when I crave thy soccour by greate necessetye? Thou are ignorant alas! in the case of my extremetie, neyther was thou ordeyned to beare part of the pinching panges whiche I feele in my wombe, proceeding of the cursed seedes sowne by the in the bottom of my bellie, stirring even nowe in the partes of my tender sides with suche tormente, that onlye I pore wretche do beare the pennaunce of the falte dewe to us both. Yf the viewe of thy former pleasure, wherewith thou haste bene earst so franklie feasted at the bowntifull handes of thy Pandora, can not move the to compassion of her present greffe, spare at least to spil the blood of thyne owne liknes, derived of the dropps of the moste precious jewice in the; who harbored (as thy gweste) in the secrete corners of my tender flankes, takes daily norriture with increase of life by the vitall inspiracion of nature, and whose innocencie (if I dye by thy crueltie) will not faile in th'other worlde to summe the afore the highe troane of justice, wher I expect the juste revenge of th'undeserved wronge, wherewith (contrarye to the nature of loyall lovers) thou rewardest her, that earste loved the not so derelie as nowe she persecutes the with mortall hate, even untill the laste houre of her life.

PANDORA.'

The firste viewe of this letter was of harde digestion to Parthonope; who, albeit the feare which he hadde that Pandora wold mordure (as she did indede) the frute congeiled of the substance of them bothe in her intralles presented a certeine remorse afore the eyes of his conscience, yet, because she woulde never afore let him understande that she was with childe, hee thoughte it was but a newe meane to allure him eftesones to the trafficke of her affaires. Wherupon, using as litle regarde to the contentes of the letter as he made smal accompte of her that write it, dispatched the messenger with this short aunswere:—'Thou shalte' (sayeth

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

he) 'declare to thy mistrys that if she had heretofore ymparted to me th'effect of thy present message, she would have disposed of mee and my frendshippe at her pleasure, but nowe, seinge shee craves my assistaunce by necessitie, I committe her to the meede of her owne follie.' Whereof Pandora, beinge advertised by the heavie reapport of her Fynea, who also alledged dispaire eftsones to recover the frendshippe or companie of the knighte, entred furthwyth into suche dispoicion of malencollie, wyth ymagynacions of revenge, that, convertinge th'appetite of her aunciente love into an humor of deadlie hate, doubted whether shee shoulde use force againste her selfe, for the spite of the villainy he had don to her, or persecute hym unto deathe whose life shee utterly detested. And waveringe thus in contrarietie of opinions, she soughte to appease somewhat the fure of her presente dolloure, by recordyng her greefe with these lamentable tearmes:—

'Alas!' (saith shee) 'if this bee the rewarde of true loyaltie, what assuraunce maye wee reappose in constancie? Or what meede to bee expected in the vertue of suche unfained frendshippe, as I professed to this unthankful and perjured knighte? Have I refused the service of so many gentlemenne, offringe franklie to employe their times under the becke of my commaundemente, to make my affection subjecte to one, who, havinge alreadie cooled oute of me the frutes of his desyer, smiles nowe at my simplicitie, and laughs to see mee languishe in dule? Ah! why were the eyes of my mynde so dymmed with the myste of fonde zeale that I colde not consider the common malice of menne now a dayes; who, preferring their humble service wyth all kinde of othes, dienge a thousande times a daye for oure sakes, yea! offringe their lyves to all kinde of perill, doo seame to remeine prisonners in the ward of oure good will, untill their fayned ymportunyties, prevailynge above the weake resistance of us poore wretches, do place theime in the possession of their desyer? And, beinge once made lordes over that whyche onely colde commaunde theym afore, God knowethe howe sone they revolte, torninge their fervente affection into a contempte of our fragilitie! If I had as carefullie caste all

DISCOURSE

III

Pandora
exclaimeth.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE

III

argumentes, of future disquiet, as I was readie to open myne cares to the sugred breathe of his charmes, I hadde eschewed the evill wyth the cause; neyther hadde I stande (as I do nowe) readye to enter into the harde pennaunce of my former follie. Ah! moste unthankfull Parthonope! howe canste thou soo easely forgette her who was no nigarde in satysfyenge thy desyers, and whose bewtie thou seemedeste carste to have in no lesse admiracion thenne if I hadde beene sente from above for th' only solace of thy lyfe? Hath thy presente crueltie prevailed whollie above the glory of thyne aunciente vertue? Or haste thou utterlie dismissed the remembraunce of thy othe, and protestacion of faythe, whyche oughte to call thy conscience to a remorse, forcinge a performance of thy promisse? Whereof, also, (sayeth shee) castynge her waterie eyes down to her bigge bellie, 'thou hast lefte mee a pawne, whyche, witnessinge no lesse thy disloyaltye agaynste mee thenne advowching the frendshippe thou haste founde at my handes, oughte to knocke at the dore of thy conscience for some consideracion of pitie towards her, whome wythout cause thou doste shamefullie abuse. Oh! unhappy and wretched ladye that I am, in what companye canne I shewe my heade, wherin the bignes of my bellie (bringing the blodd of shame into my face), will not accuse me of treason towards my husbände, beinge so longe tyme absente? What wronge dothe the worlde to my wickednes, if every man salute me by the name of a common and arraunde strompette, who, defacing her aunciente honour and house wyth the lascivious exercise of adulterous abuse, deserveth to be registred in the slaunderous boke of black defame with a crowne of infamy for ever? Wherunto, like as thy subtil practises (Oh! caytyfe knyghte!) hath advanced me; so thy tyranny in the end shal take awaye the life of those ii who oughte to be farre more deare unto the, then thou seanest to accompte them.' Wherwith, fallinge into alteracions of more furye, she began a cruell warre with her faire haires, printinge her nailes (wythout respecte) in the rosye dye of her faire face, bedewinge her bossome and skirtes of outwarde garmentes with the droppes of teares distilling from her cristal eyes, and entringe thus into the

Herselfe and
the child
with in her.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

pageant of rage, had here plaid the laste acte of the tragedie in executinge herselfe, if the presence of Fynea had not prevented the facte; who, stirringe upp rather the appitit of revenge in her mistrys, then mynstringe perswacions to patience or moderation in her dollor, incensed her by all the wicked devises shee colde ymagyne, to wreake her juste anger uppou the villainous bodye of him that so synisterlie procured her passion of undeserved dule. Whereunto, albeit Pandora gave diligent eare, with desyer to put her advise into execution, yet, havinge not utterlie drayned her stomake of all complaints, renewed eftsones her exclamacion in this sort:—

DISCOURSE

III

‘ Ah! sayeth she why was not I traded in the magicall sciences of the Colchose Medea or th’ Yytalyan Circe, whose conninge (workinge mervailous in the like affaires) hath left an ymortalitie to their names to al ages. Certainly if the heavens had revealed unto me any skil in the misterie of their artes, eyther sholde Parthonope be myne, or els woulde I raine the shower of vengeance uppou him, and her that enjoyeth the mede of my merite, with suche ympetuosytie, that the sequeile of the world sholde have no lesse cause to cronicle my doinges, then they seame commonly to confirme and allow th’actes of the ii former enchaunteresses. And thou, Fynea, sholdest have me to forgett him, in whose love I doate, although I wishe nothing so muche as his utter destruction. And now do I see the due rewarde of my former unchaste conversacion, for the fervente affection whiche I beare him, doth now yelde me doble usurye of the wanton libertie wherin I have lived hetherunto; neyther shall I be enjoyned to other penance for my falte then a loathesome dispaire which attendes (if I do not recover him whom I have lost, or have spedye meanes to revenge the wrong he hath don me) to cut in sunder the strings of my life. Wherefore, beyng resolved in some parte to folowe thy advise, so muste I also use thy traveile in th’execution of my first attempte, whiche is that thou goe furthwith to the vale of Cammonika in the contrey of Bressiant, which (as they saye) is not without great stoare of conninge sorcerers; amongst whom it is necessarie that thou learne (what so

Medea and Circe, ii great enchaunteresses.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE

III

Pandora
sendes her
mayd to
practise with
the witches
of the vale.

Nether cer-
teintie nor
assurance in
the art of
enchantyng.

God suffred
the magicians
of Egypte
to worke
wonders in
the sight of
Pharao.

ever it coste) some enchaunement of so greate vertue, that it maye not onely restore me eftesones to the frendship of hym whome I thynke hath utterly forsaken me, but, by the conjuracion of theyr charme, have power to remove the vaile of his affection from hys newe wyfe, that, makyng no more accompte of her, he maye from hensfurth dissolve the league of myntie betwene them for ever. Wherein, if the effect of my desyer bee furthered by a successe of thy diligence, assure thy selfe, thy travaile shall be so thankfully employed, that, chrystennynge the hensfurth by the name of my syster, there shalbe neither riches nor commoditie anye waye proper or due unto me, whiche shall not be common to us both.' Fynea, who was not so readie to obey her mystres in this develishe enterprise, as gyven of her selfe to bee a fyt minister of evill, discending with expedicion into the vale of Camonika, gat, by the helpe of those sprites and lymmes of the Devill inhabytyng that hellishe yland, certayne flowers gathered in the waine of the moone, with droagues, and other tromperie of witchecraft, requisite for conjurers and suche as occupye the pernicious trade of enchauntyng. All whiche legerdemaines and devises of Sathan, were as availeable to the furthering of th'enterprise of Pandora as there is certentie or assurance in th'operation of that darke and hellishe science, what invocation so ever they make of the name of God; who, beyng the father and author of all troth, wyll never have the triumphant glorye of his name polluted wyth the cursed ceremonies of suche ydolatries, neyther wyll he bowe downe his cares to the petition of such diabolicall devynours, who, practisyng to seduce the simple sorte wyth charmes of sorceries, do preferre the absolute destruction of theyr owne soule. And trulye th'almightye (whose judgements are inscrutable) is content somtyme to suffer those conjurers and enchauntes (the veray officers of hel) as wel for the scourge of our synnes as to manifeste theyr owne infidelitie, to worke many greate and incredible wounders—as we reade of the magicians in Egypte before Pharao; th'enchautresse stirryng up the sprit of Samuell in the presence of Saule, kinge of the Hebrues; and Simon, the cojurer, honored as a God of the folishe prince and

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

people of Rome—to th'ende the faythfull flocke(strengthened and confirmed, by the grace of the holye sprite) maye glorye in theyr assured belyef in the true God, by the peremptorye fal of those infedels, together wyth all suche as unhappelye lysten to theyr pernicious doctrine.

DISCOURSE

III

Here Pandora, seyng all her devises (accompanied with a crooked fortune) retourne a successe contrary to her meanye, began to enter into a newe passion of suche rage and dispaire, that she had even nowe dismissed the residue of her dayes by the fatall dome of her owne handes, yf she had not bene eftsones interrupted by Fynea, who, for th'appeasinge of her present dule, preferred unto her the ayde of a graye frier, a greate ghostly father in that cytie, whom she affirmed to have wroughte marvelous effectes by the healpe of certeine distilled waters, tempered wyth the jewice of stronge hearbes, growynge secretlye within the intrailles of the earth, the nature of hidden stoanes and mettals, pouders and seedes not knowne to manye, wyth diverse suffumigacions incident to witchecraft: and who, in deede, was noted to have bestowed more of hys tyme in the studie of that darke arte and philosophie of Sathan then in tourninge over the sacred volumes of holye scripture and testament of the Lorde, whiche oughte to bee the only exercise of those that are cladd in the habite of religion.

The studie of scripture ought to bee th'exercise of the religious.

Beholde! here an example of greate vertue in oure Abbaye men; who, beinge appareilled in a simple habite in signe of humilitey, doe carye the devill in the cowle of theyr hoodes, and who (accordynge to Saint Augustin) beinge the chiefe pillors that susteine supersticion, are also the greatest frendes to ydolatrie, dimnyng the puritie of religion (which they oughte to honor and professe with sincere ymitacion) with a cloude of suche darknes of the devises of the devill, that th'onlye vapour of theyr poysoned infection is hable to corrupte the whole ayre wyth a contagious pestilence. Howe shoulde the ignoraunt bee guided in the righte waye to salvacion, if they whiche oughte to open the lyght of the gospell do give manifest examples of errorrs? Or how can the glorye of God bee renoumed amongst men, if they, whiche, standynge in the pulpit of truth, and ought sin-

Abbaies the chiefe pillors that menteine superstion and ydolatrie.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE III cerelye to preache the lawe of the Lorde, do conuerte theyr dutie towards the true religion into practises of nygro-mancie and tearmes of invocation of devils; unprofitable membres certainlye, deservinge rather to bee utterlye weded out of the common-welth, then (norrished in the idle trade of an abbaye lownde) to be suffred (under the vaile of godlynnes and devocion) to practise haynous conspiracies againste God and man? But what? doe I medle thys parte of my historye wyth th'office of the preacher, to whome it chieflye belongeth to treat uppon the sondrye abuses committed daylye in nonries, and other lyke tenementes of Babylon? To this holye father, then, commes Pandora with a countenance all cladd wyth sorowe, declarynge the circumstance of her love passed, the cause of her present passion, with the whole discourse of her former lyfe hitherunto, cravyng (wyth greate intercession in the ende) th'assistance of his arte, for moderation in the martiredome which she endured by the fervent affection she beare to the knyghte.

Abbayes and nonries tenementes of Babylon.

Freares bee covetous.

The freare (notwithstanding his vowe and straithe othe of his order) had not his conscience so armed wyth the vertue of charitye, nor his handes so cleane washed from the covetous desyer of fylthie gaine, but he received certeine peces of golde of Pandora, whome he persuaded shoulde buye certeine drogues and other necessaries, whiche he thought convenient to the makynge of hys diabolicall confection. But, to be shorte, theis charmes and deceitfull perfumes of the freare were of equall operation in this enterprise to the hearbes and other healpes, lately gathered in the vale Camonika by the woman of Pandora; who, seinge herselfe utterly defyed of fortune, in receyvynge semblable successe in all her magicall devises, expectynge withall a spedie retourne of her husbände, detemnde to avenge the desloyaltie of her lover upon the frute sturryng in her owne wombe—being nowe vi monethes since she conceived—thinkyng she sholde never be voyde of desyer to see Parthonope, or at leaste to revenge his treason, untill she had utterlye extirped the rootes of that seede whiche he had sowen in the soile of her tender sydes. Oh crueltie more then barbarous! Is it possible that a gentelwoman of so tender yeres, derived of honest

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

parentage, norrishd in civilitie, and, that whyche more is, a Christian, borne in the harte of Europe, shold so muche forget the feare of God and regarde to his lawes, as, in augmentynge the haynous faulte of the wronge alre dye don againste her husbnde by so many and unchaste adulteries, to committ in the ende an execrable effusion of the bloode derived of the droppes of her owne substance? Oh! howe cursed and unhappye is the condicion of them that, declinynge (for wante of grace) from the pathe of reason, do suffer theimselfes to bee ledd by the lyne of fleshlye appetyt, the chiefest meane that makes us forgett God and all good order. For this Pandora, desyrous to cover her faulte, albeit not hable to hide her bigge bellye, assayed to destroye the creature (movynge within her) by crushynge her sydes wyth greate force, drynkyng cawdels made for the nonst, and swallowinge diverse other pouders of such strong confection, that theyr vehement operation within her, had bene able to prevaile above the strengthe of the highest complexion of the worlde. Albeit, seyng her expected successe of this beastelye pollecye was also denied her, she devised a laste meane for the accomplishment of her enterprise, whiche the veraye enemy of nature (I am sewer) woulde abhorre to ymagine; which was that—seyng she coulde not be delyvered by the assistaunce of sorceries, purgacions, nor other pollecie whyche the arte of enchauntyng was hable to lende her—she resolved (as a bloddie boocher of her owne blood) to brake the bed of th' infant within her entrails, and drive it out of her wombe by veray force. Wherein she was assisted by Finea, who, accordynge to the commaundement of her mystresse, carryng a sylver basyn into the highest torret in the house, wente thether immediatly bothe together; where, after the doares were shott on all sides, Pandora, with a troubled countenance, all pantinge for the horroure of the acte which she ment to execute, beholdynge her bellye with serpentine eyes sparklyng with flames of furie, sayed unto her mayde:—' Like as, alas! thou knowest, Finea, howe extremelye I am delte withall at the handes of the thrise wretched Parthonope, who (without anye respect to the paine which I endure) hath utterly disclaimed mine acquaint-

DISCOURSE

III

Suggestion
of the fleshe
makes us
sonest forget
God.

A develishe
devise of
Pandora.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE III ance, wyth lesse regarde to preserve the seedes whyche he hathe grafted and lefte growinge within me, even so thou arte not ignoraunt of th'indeavour I have used to reclaime hym, and rampyer myselfe eftsones in his favor; wherof the one is no lesse unlikelye then the other daungerous. And, beyng spyted of fortune, heaven and earthe seame also to bende the force of theyr malice againste mine attemptes. Albeit I coulde somewhat moderate the extremetie of my passion, yf the viewe of my greate bellye dyd not renewe the rage of my fever; wherein I dye a thousande tymes, havynge anye thyng afore mine eyes that eyther representeth his licknes, or moveth any cause of remembrance of that detestable wretche, who (as I hope) shall never take pleasure in any child of his engendred in the bodye of Pandora. And as I have assayed diverse wayes (as thou knowest) to discharge me of this burden, wherin I have nothyng prevayled, because my destenie contends against my endeavor, even so, beyng not hable any longer to conceile my faulte, nor cover my wombe swelled with the wycked sede of his generacion—and seyng withall my husband is now upon the point of his returne—I am determind to commit my life to extreme perill; to th'ende to dispatche me of this burden, which I hate as much as other women take pleasure to beare and bryng forth with so great contentement. And, if I coulde as largelye commande over him as I have power to worke the spyte of his wrong uppon the pawne he hath lefte within me, I assure thee these handes should make no lesse straunge anotomy of his carcas, then I mean forthwith, in thy presence, to dismember the monster which, by his acte, I fele stirre in the inner partes of my raines.' Wherein Finca, hearing this develish resolucion, preferred persuasions to the contrarie, alledgyng that the horror were to great that a mother shoulde become the tyrannous murdresse of herselfe and childe at one instant. 'And' (saith she) 'touchinge your being with child, there be meanes inough to kepe it secret without using any crueltye, in killyng th'innocent creature, which ought not to heare the penance of the faulte of the father.' 'Tush! tush!' saith this she wolfe and merciles Medea, 'that evil is but light

The evil is
but light
where coun-
cell takes
place.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

III

where counsel takes place. Do awaye these persuasions and dispose thyselfe to assiste me; for otherwise thou shalt see me dye in thy presence, and then thy preachynge shalbe in vayne to her that is absolutly resolved to pursue the ende of her meanyng. 'What is it then that I shall doe?' saith Finea. To whom (as a cruell Megera comminge out of the hollow and darke places of th' infernal valleys) she enjoyed her this fyrst charge:—'Get thee upp,' saith she, 'upon that high coffer there, and I wil spred my bellye alonge upon the grounde, with my backe upwarde. And so, wyth all thy force, thou shalte leape upon my reynes; whych I hope wil be a meane to open an issue for this cursed burden whiche is so grevous for me to carye. Wherin, if thou use th' uttermost of thy force, thou shalte restore me to spedye contentement; but if thou spare to employe thy whole strength, thou shalte prolonge my paine, drivynge me to make myne owne handes the ministers of my meanyng.' Finea, not lykynge greatly the charge of suche commission, and muche lesse the execucion in so horrible a maner, althoughe the terrour of the fact troubled her for a tyme, yet, beyng of longe tyme acquainted wyth the condicions and crueltye of her mystres, mounts upon the highe chest, leapinge seaven or eyghte tymes together upon the backe of Pandora, wyth suche impetuositie, that anye man woulde have thought that so many blowes, wyth the heavye swaigh of all her bodye, had bene hable to have broken the bones of her backe and dispatched the mother and childe together. But all these traffickes beyng in vayne, prolonged but the payne of Pandora; who, doublyng her rage wyth this repulse of her enterprise, entred into devises of more mischief and tyraunie not almost to be talked of. What hart alas! is so endurated wyth the mettall of hardnes, but the horror of this hellishe crueltye, wyll move it to destil drops of bloud? What countenance so assured that cane wythhold hys teares, or not shrinck at the tyranous disposition of this Iyonesse? Or what heares wyll not stande up at the tragicall discours of this strange kynde of chylde bearyng?

Truelye, I knowe that vertuous ladyes (sprinkled wyth the dewe of pytie) wyll not onelye tremble at the remem-

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE
III
braunce of the inordinate crueltie of this cursed mother, but also open the conduits of their compassions, weping on the behalfe of the torment wherin unnaturally she plunged the innocent impe which nature had formed of the substance of herselfe; who, converted from the shape of a woman into the disposition of a deuel, raging without measure, that she coulde not be delivered, howled out at laste with a horrible crye full of impietie and blasphemie in this sorte:— ‘Seynge’ (sayth she) ‘that both God and the devell denie me their assistance, I will (in spyghte of their powers) ryd me of thee, oh! cursed and execrable creature.’ Wherwith, possessed wholye with the spirit of furie, having her eyes sonke into her head, her stomake panting, and her face all full of black bloud, by the vehemencie of the conflicte which she had indured, began to leape with al her force from the toppe of the coffer down to the ground, brosing her sides with her handes and playinge on the drum with her fystes upon her great bellye, with such huge blowes that, felyng even now the lytel creature within her removed from his place, redye to drope oute of her wombe, called for the socors of Finea, who standyng in place of a midwyfe, received (in a silver basyn) an infant male, unlawfullye conceyved, bedewed as yet wyth the wet soddes of his wicked mother, sprauling and breathing with a litell ayre of lyfe: whiche doloros spectacle, moyng Finea to present compassion, drive her into teares of great dule; as well that for she sawe so fayre a creature driven out of his habitacion before his due terme, and without the consent of nature, as also to see it redie to be layed upon the polluted alter of immolations, for an offering to the devill, afore it weare washed and purified thorowe the sacred sacrament of baptisme. Oh! horrible and execrable condicion of an Italian, who, being fostered in the myrie vale Camonyeka, amongst the wyches and cursed enchaunterers, socked there the vice of her nurce wyth the mylke of her pappe. Albeit, I coulde make comparison of the like crueltie executed in the greatest cytie of Fraunce by a gentilwoman of that contrye, who, beinge newly delivered of the burden of her bellye, made a beastlye sacrifice of it in the fyre, and that wyth the consent

Paris.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

and in the presence of the detestable pallyard * that begat it, deservynge both to be invested with the tytell of cursed parentes and blodye bochers of the sedes congealed of theyr owne substaunce, savynge that the ende of this infortunat infant was more tragicall, and the doings of his mother more detestable; who, excedinge the brutall crueltie of the wolfe, tygresse, or lyonesse, ravenynge amongst the flocke of lytell lambes in the fatt and fertyll feldes of Libia, seinge her thus discharged of her burden began also to dysmysse the greatnes of her dolor, and, beholdinge with her eyes (shyninge lyke the blase of two torches with the flame of furye) the new-borne creature sprawling in the basyn began to whett her tethe, shakinge her heade with horrible regards, prognosticatinge the laste acte of the rage whiche she hadde yet to playe; saying unto Finea:—‘Dost thou not see howe this lyttel beaste resembles alreadye the image of his parjured father? Beholde now, I praye the, his countenance and marke the sondry liklehods that even now appeare in his face, arguinge undoubtedly that (if lyfe woulde geve leave to his inclynacion) his detestable disposicion woulde be nothingse inferyor to the villanie of him whose trayterous disloyaltye hath made me (as thou seest) the cursed mynister of in-ordynat creweltye. And if I had the lyke power over him that is the cause of this unnatural passion, I would assuredlye enjoyne him such penaunce, that his juste chastysment shoulde import a terror to all traytors that hereafter shoulde seke to seduce anye ladye by sugred words.’ Wherewith, bendinge her lokes towardes the lyttell impe (hastinge to his ende by the seconde conflicte hee hadde endewred by hys mother and her mayde afore his eyes weare unsealed to see the light of this worlde) she wished eftsones the presens of Parthonope. ‘Upon whome’ (sayth shee) ‘syth I am unhappelye denyed to wreake my vengauce in suche sorte as I woulde, at leaste I will content myselfe for the tyme to see the ponyshed in the place of him whose pycure thow rightlye presentes, as a trewe patorne shaped of the masse of his substance. And, seinge thy destynye is to incurre the penaunce due to thy father, the payne of thy execucion shalbe nothingse inferyor to the meryt of his execrable falt. Wherin,’ sayth shee,

DISCOURSE

III

*Whore-
maister.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE III 'arme yourselves (oh! my handes) with corage, and shrinke not to bee the mynisters of the ponishment which my tongue hath pronounced! Rejoyce, oh my harte! in the effusion of his blodd, whose death brings repose to the long passion of thy dolors! And you, mine eyes, laughe your full, to se the dismembringe of him whome I mean to offer as a sacrafyse of vengauce on the behalfe of Parthonope, whose remembraunce (with the blodde of his son) I will presentlye rote out of my minde for ever!' Certenlye, good ladyes, my harte, abhorring no lesse the remembraunce of this bychfoxe, then my spirite, trobled with tremblinge feare at the contynauce of her creweltye, gives such impediment to my penne that it is scarce hable to discribe unto you the laste act of her rage: wherin this lymme of th' infernal lake, not worthye any longer to beare the name of a woman, procedinge to th'ende of her enterprise, takes up her sonne with her bloodye and murderinge handes, whom, without all compassion, and contrary to the order of a christian, she beates with all her force againste the walles, paintinge the postes and pavements in the chamber with the blodde and braynes of the innocent creature newe borne. Wherwith, not yet contented nor satisfied in her rage, she takes in eyther of her handes one of the tender legges of the child now deade, and, deviding them as the bocher joynts his lambe or yonge goate which he layes upon his staulle to be sould, fell of a sodayn laughter in signe of the greate pleasure she toke in this execution, wishing, notwithstanding, to enter into the same exercise with him of whom this deformed carrion (as she tearmed this dismembred infant) toke his firste beginninge. Here, if I shoulde preferre the perticuler discours of the exploits of this second Medea and execrable monster of our time, I could not escape (I am sure) without the secret grudges of some, who, havinge made large sale of their honor at to lowe a price, and getting in like sort the byt of frantike jalosye betwen their teth, do stodye nothing but the art of reveng. Albeit because the vertue of honest and chast ladies shal shine the clearer by the darke eclipse of such common enemyes of the whole secte femenyne, I wil yet treat of the tyranny of this Pandora, who

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

III

reserved the extreame pointe of her Jewishe creweltie until the last act of her tragedye. For, marteringe the dead childe, and treadinge it under her fete, she thrust her hande under his shorte rybbes, and taking out his hart gnawed it (as a bych of Hercania) betwene her teth into littell morsels, saying that shee hoped one daye to provyde the like banquyt for Parthonope, whiche shoulde confirme the quyet she felt in the present death and destestable execucion of his image and likenes. And, having her hand yet dyed with the blodd of this guiltles impe of nature, shee cold not be ryd of the importunat devil that possessed her, until she had brought the ryver of her rage unto th' extreme brinke of tyrannye, neyther could her harte be brought to appeasement so longe as her eyes fed upon the viewe of the deade infant. Wherefore, callinge in a great mastyphe cur, she gave him (by pecemeale) the members of her childe, an act suer of no lesse detestation afore the high throne of God then to be abhorred of all the world. Ah las! have th' Ytalyan mothers no other tombes for their children, then to bury them in the belly of a dogge? Be these the teares wherewith they accompanye them into the shrouding shete? Is this the curtesy of Italye, or a creweltie derived of the barbarous nacion? But how cold she expose other frewttes outwardly then according to the nature of the spirite which possessed her within? For the devill, beinge seased of her hart, made her body and other members the mynisters of her wil: which God doth oftentimes suffer, as wel for the due correction of haynous faults as also for an example and terror of all offenders in the like affayres.

I am lothe, good ladyes, to passe any further in the pursute of this dolorous tragedye; because (your eyes alrede wearyed with wepinge) methinke, I see also, your eares offer to close themselves against the report of this Pandora, whose only offence had bene enough to staine your whole secte with perpetual infamie, if the pure chastitie of so many of you offred not to confute the slaunder by your vertue only. Neither can the impudente and wicked liffe of suche double curtalls (as shee was) impayre th'estimation of them that, wyth th'intente of pure integritie, do rather give

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

III

suck to their honor with the milke of simplicytye, then, being Italyonated with all subtelyes, trustinge onlye in the humor of their owne braine, do fall at laste into the common slaunder of all the worlde. For a famylyar profe wherof I leave you to skanne the order and doinges of this Pandora, who, waxinge nowe somewhat colde in her former passions of frensye and rage, began to be pinched with the panges incydenete commenlye to all women in the paynfull travell of childe bearinge. Wherof, goinge to bed, shee caused certeyn baynes to be provided; wherin washinge herselfe, the next daye (beinge hallowed and a feaste of great solempnytye) she was caryed in a rych coche to vysitt the companie of other ladyes, amongst whome she was not worthye to kepe place, being the shamefull bocher of her own blood and wicked enemye to the life of man.

Herein is to be noted the destruction of a woman banished the pallays of reason; together with the due mede of their merytt, who, for the respect of a lyttell pleasure, (of no more contynuaunce then a moment) do put their honour upon tearmes of infamy, and their soules in hazard of everlastinge tormente. Here the adulterers maye see howe justelye God ponysheth their infydelytie, and breach of othes towards their husbands. Let also the yong ladyes and lyttel girls learne to direct the cours of their youth by the contrary of this example; and, beinge once registred in the boke of maryage, let them stand upon their guard for falling into the like folies. For ther is nothing committed in secret, but in the end it bursts out to a common brute: which our savior Christ affyrmeth by the mouthe of the prophet, sainge, that what so ever is done in the darkest corner of the house shalbe published in the end in open audience. And he who sekese moste to conceile his faulte, is not onlye (by the permission of God) the first opner of the same, but also beares the badge of shame afore the face of the world, and standes in daunger of grace in the presence of him from whom no secret canne be hydde.

DISCOURSE

IV

AN ALBANOYSE Capteine, beinge at the poynte
to dye, kylled his wyfe, because no man
should enjoye her beawtie after
his deathe.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE IV

THE ARGUMENT

It may seeme to some that delighte in the reporte of other men's faltes, with respect rather to take occasion of synister exclamacion then be warned by their evils to eschewe the like harmes in themselves, that I have bene to prodigall in notinge the doinges and lives of diverse ladies and gentlewomen declininge by misfortune from the path of vertue and honour, only to sturre up cause of reproche and leave to confirme their fonde opinion. Albeit, as their error appereth sufficiently in the integretye of my meaninge, so I hope th' indifferent sort will geve an other judgement of my entente ; the rather for that I have preferred these discourses, both for the proffit of the present glorye of them that bee paste, and instruction of suche as bee to come ; seing withal they discover more cause of rebuke and vices more heynous in men, then any we finde committed by women. And albeit the historye last recyted hath set fourth in lvely colours the furee and madd dispocition of a woman forced by disloyaltie, yet if a man maye any waie excuse synne, it maye in some sorte be dispensed withall, or at leaste with more reason then the tyranous execution followinge, committed by a man without occasion ; where a certaine jelousye sprong of an unjoste myslyke (as she thought) is readie to cover the falte of Pandora. For what is he so ignorante in the passions of love that will not confesse that jelosye is an evill exceedinge all the tormentes of the world, supplantinge oftentymes bothe wytt and reason in the moste wise that be, specially when appeareth the lyke treason that Pandora perswaded herselfe to receive by him that forsok her. But for th' other, how can he be acquitted from an humor of a frantike man, who, without any cause of offence in the world, committes cruel execution upon his innoceente wife, no lesse fayre and furnished in al perfections, then chast and verteous without comparison. Neyther is joylowsye

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

the cause of morder, considring that the opynion is no sooner conceyved then there followeth (as it were) a distrust of the partye that thinkes to receive the wronge, with an indifferent desyer to them both to stande upon their gard, in sort lyke ii enemyes workinge the mutuall destruction the one of the other. Whereof, leaving the judgement to them that be of good stomake to disgest all kindes of meates, or can carye a traine to bukle with the fumes of everye brothe that is offred them, I have here to expose unto you a myserable accident, happening in our tyme, whiche shall serve as a bloody skaffolde, or theaterye, wherin are presented such a play no partes but in mortal and furious tragideies.

DISCOURSE

IV



DURINGE the sege and miserable sacke of Modona (a cytye of the Mores, confyning upon the sea Peloponese, not farr from the straite of Ysthmyon, by the whiche the Venetians conveighe their great traffique and trade of marchandise) Baiazeth, th' emperour of the Turkes, and great grandfather to Sultan Solyman who this daye governeth the state of th' oriente, used so many sortes of inordinat cruelties in the persecucion of those wretches whom fate, with extreme force of his warr, had not onlye habandoned from the soyle of their ancient and naturall bode, but also (as people ful of desolation and voide of succour every waye) forced them to crave harbor of the lymtrophall townes adjoyning their countrey, to shroude ther weary bodyes, bleding still with the woundes of their late warre, and overcome besides wyth the violence of hungar and cold—ii common enemies that never faile to followe the campe of miserie. And as in a generall calamitie everie man hath his fortune, so, amongst the unhappie crewe of these fugitives and creatures full of care, there was one gentleman no lesse noble by discente then worthelye renowned by the glorie of his own actes; who, accompting it a chyefe and principal vertue to withstande the mallice of fortune with magna-

Hunger and colde, 2 common enemies attendinge the campe of miserie.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE

IV

In everye
mischiefe for-
tune beareth
the greatest
swaighe.

No man
within the
daunger of
fortune but
suche as lake
assurance in
vertue.

Vertue yeldes
good frutes
to such as
embrace her
unfaynedly.

nimitie of mynd, thought it not also the office of a noble hart to yeld to the sentence of adversitie, or geve any place to the injurie of present time, consideringe that, in everye distresse, Fortune beareth the greatest swaighe; whose mallice is neyther of perpetuities, nor yet to be feared of such as have their harts armed with assurance in vertue. For as she is no lesse uncertaine of herselfe then her doinges full of mutabilitie, so, accordinge to th'advice of the philosopher, she is to be used with suche indifferencie of all estates, that wee neade neyther laugh when she smyles, nor feare when she threates. Neither hathe she anye to followe the chariot of her victorie but the caitiffe or cowarde, and suche as are denied the assistaunce and benifet of trewe vertue. This gentleman (whom mine author termeth by the name of Pierro Barzo) wearie even nowe with drawinge the heavie yocke of harde exile, left the rest of his contrymen and companions of care complaininge their mutuall myseries together, and retired to the ryche and populous cytie of Mantua; where his cyvell governmente, and prudent behavior (accompanied with a singuler dexteritie in exploytes of armes, and other exercises of chevalrye, arguinge th'unfayned noblenes of his mynde) gave suche a shewe of his vertue, that he was not onlye in shorte tyme intertaind of the Marques and governour there, but also made generall of the whole armie of footemen. Where, enjoynging thus the benefyt of his vertue—who commonly yeldes no lesse successe to suche as imbrace her with true ymytacion, and treade the pathe of her loare with semblable sinceritie of mynde—he had there with him at the same instante his wyfe, beinge also of Modona, derived of no lesse nobilytie then he, and nothings inferiour in all gyftes of nature and ornaments of vertue. For touchinge her bewtie, seaming of suche wonderfull perfection that it was thoughte nature was dryven to the ende of her wittes in framinge a peece of so great excellencie, they dowed not to geve her therby the tytle of the faire Helene of Greece. Nether was she lesse meritorious for her vertues; beinge blessed therwith so plentifully at the handes of th'Almighty, that it was doubted to the writers of that tyme whether God or nature deserved the greatest prayes in forminge so perfecte a crea-

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

ture. If this were a consolation and singuler contentment of the pore Modonoysse—waighinge earste in the ballance of his unhappy fortune, denied anye more to enjoye the freedom of his contrye, dryven by force from the auncient succours and solace of his frendes, wandringe in wooddes and deserte places unknowne, and (that whiche worse is) lefte onely to the mercie of hunger and coulde, with expectation to fall eftesones into the handes of hys enemyes; and nowe to bee taken from the malice of all theis miseries and restored to a place of abode, richesse and entertainment sufficient for sustentation, to beare office and authoritie amongeste the best, and rampierd besydes within th' assured good will and opinion of the chiefe governor of a contreye—I appeale to th' opinions of those who earst have changed their miserable condicion, or state of adversytie, with the benefyt and goodnes of the lyke fortune. Or if, againe, he had cause to rejoyce and make sacrifice to his fortune, that had gyven hym a wyfe, noted to be the odd image of the worlde for beautye, behaviour, courtesey, and uprighte dealyng, constant wythout cause or argument of dishonesty, and that (whiche is the chieftest ornament and decoracion of the beautie of a woman) to bee of disposition readye to obeye her husbände, yeldinge hym suffraintye with a deutifull obedience, with other vertues that made her an admiration to the whole multitude, and her lyfe a spectacle to the ladyes of our age to beholde and imitate the like vertues—I leave it to the judgement of that smal number of happy men who (by a speciall grace from above) are ordeined to enjoye the benefyt of so rare and precious a gyfte. This couple, thus rejoycinge the retourne of happy lyfe, resigned withall their teares of auncient dule, and embraced the gyfte of present time, with intent to spend the remainder of their yeres in mutual consolacion and contentement of mynde. Wherein they were assisted wyth a second blessing of God; who, for the increase of theyr new comfort, sent them a doughter, who in beautye, vertue, and all other gyftes of grace, dyd nothyng degenerate from the patterne and mould from whence she was derived. Wherof she gave great showes as nature seamed to increase her yeres and

DISCOURSE

IV

The chieftest vertue in a wife is to be obedient to her husband.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE

IV

Fortune is
alwayes
jalouse of the
ease of man.

The malice of
the world
rageth most
upon widows
and fatherles
children.

conferme her in discrecion. But what assuraunce is ther in the pleasure of people, seinge the worlde hitselpe is appointed his date, whiche he can not passe; or why shoulde we repose a perpetuitye in our worldlye afaires, seinge that both theyr continuance and confidence endes wyth the lengthe of tyme? And Fortune, who is alwayes jelouse of the ease of man, and not content to let us lyve longe in quiet, is alwayes laying her ambushe, devisyng howe to interrupte oure felicitie. And as she is blinde of herselfe, and lesse certeintie in her doinges, so she forgettes not to discover her conspiracies when we leste thinke of her, and invade us when we accompte us moste sewer of her frendshippe. Wherof she gave a manifest declaration in the person of this faire ladye; from whome she toke her deare husband in the flower of his yeres, and she not yet conformed in age and discretion hable to beare and withstande th' ordinarye assaultes of the worlde. Whiche she founde also of more uneasy tolleracion, as wel for the fervent zeale and affiance whiche lawe of kynde dyd bynde her to beare to her late spouse and loyall husbände, as, also, for that she sawe herselfe lefte amongst the handes of straungers, farre from her parentes and frendes, voyde of refuge in her owne cuntrye, and withoute a heade to defende her from the malice of men, whiche commonlye rageth wyth more extremytie againste weake and desolate widowes and pore fatherles orphanes then againste them that are hable to withstande their malice, and represser theyr violence wyth equall power. And, albeit she was lefte to her owne lybertye to lyve as she lyst, (as you have harde) and not yet felyng the burden of xx wynters (an age fyt to engender suspicion of the evell disposed) yet, havinge no lesse care to prevent the malice of slaunder then to kepe in entyer the small revenue lefte unto her by her husbände, she toke order wyth her domesticall affaires accordyng to her present fortune. And so, dismissing her ordinarye traine of servantes, retyred to a brother of hers, whiche dwelte also in the same towne; wher, after the funerals of her dead husbände were performed with sufficient teares and duties appertaynyng, she qualifieth some what her dule for him that was dead,

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

with the dayly view of her yong doughter (the lyvely ymage of her father), sometyme also excercisinge the indevor of the nedle (a recreacion moste convenient for widowes and all honeste matrones) never beinge seene abrode but of holye and great festivall dayes, when she wente in devoute maner to the church to here the divine service of God; beinge unhappelye espied (for all that) of an Albanoyes captaine, a noble gentelman thereabout, havinge for the credit of his vertue and valiantnes in armes the charge of certayne troopes of horsemen; who, glauncynge at unwares uppon the glisterynge beames of her beautie, became so desyrus eftsones to encounter the same, that, with the often viewe of her stately personage and generall fame of her many vertues, he became so in love with her, that (for spedye ease of his present grieffe) he was dryven to put his request uppon tearmes; makyng fyrste his sighes and sadde countenance, his solitary complexion of face often gyven to chaunge, his dolorous state and pityfull regardes of the eye when he was in her companye, forced nowe and then to abandon the same because he could not kepe hym frome teares, his often gretynge her wyth salutations in amarous order, courtyng her nowe and then wyth letters, dyttyes, and presentes of great pryce, wyth a thousande other vayne importunityes whych love dothe ymage to animate his soldiours, his chieffest ministers to bewraye hys intente and sollicite his cause. Whereof the effecte retourned no lesse frustrate, then the devise yt selfe oughte to seam vayne in the eye of all wise men: for she whose harte coulde not be earste perced wyth the malyce of her former fortune, nor be brought to stowpe to the lure of adversiteye, thoughte it a greate faulte to let love or folye make anye breache, wher so many hoate assaultes and causes of dispayre had bene valiauntlye resysted and utterly repulsed. For profe wherof, beinge wholly wedde as yet to the remembrance of her deade husband, she woulde neyther admitt hys clyentes, nor gyve audience to his embassadours, but dismissed bothe the one and the other with semblable hope: whiche broughte the captayne in suche case, that it seamed to hym a harder matter to compasse the good wyll of his ladye, then to

DISCOURSE

IV

The use of the nedle a convenient exercise for any degree of women.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE IV governe an armye or to plante a battrye wyth the advauntage of the grounde and place. Neither was he hable to withdrawe his affection or mortifye the fyre newly burst oute to flame; because the remembraunce of her beautye, the often viewe of her vertue enlarged by the generall fame of all men, together wyth the noblenes of her race enrolled in the recordes of antiquitye, presented a more desyere in hym wyth care to obtayne her, and aggravated his griefe in beinge repulsed of that whiche his harte hadde alreddie vowed to honor tyll the extreme date of hys dayes. Neyther had he the face eftesones to attempte her of hymselfe, and muche lesse to desyste from the pursue of hys desyere; but, beyng at the pointe to incurre the hazarde of dispayre, beholde! love preferred a newe and moste sewer meane, wyllynge hym to crave the assistaunce of her brother; who, beyng hys deare frende and companion in armes in the servyce of diverse princes afore tyme, he made no lesse accompte of his furtheraunce, then yf he had alreddie gotten hys frendshippe. Wherefore delaying no moment of tyme, but plying the ware whilest the water was warme, he accoasted the yong man at a convenient tyme and roved at hym in thys shorte sorte:—‘It is, my deare frende and compaignion, a vertuous disposition to be readye in well doynge, and easye to assiste honeste requestes: whiche to your nature hathe bene alwayes no lesse peculiar then to me nowe a courage in so honeste a case to crave your ayde. Neyther can the vertue of true frendshippe more lyvelye appeare, or th’office of assured frendes more amplye bee discerned, then in makyng the greffe of the one common to bothe, and beare the gyfte of tyme and fortune indifferentlye wyth mutuall affection and lyke zeale on bothe partes. Wherein, for my parte, I woulde I had as good meane to make declaracion of my true harte towardes you, as of longe tyme I have vowed to be yours to the uttermoste of my power, and you no lesse desyer to doo me good then your diligence, and assistance of frendshippe, is moste hable to stande me in steade in my present case, of no lesse importance then the verye safegarde of my lyfe.’ Which laste wordes made the Modonoyse replye with lyke

The captain
to his frende.

Th’office of
true frend-
shippe
where in it
consistes.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

IV

franke offer of mynde, protestynge unto hym by the fayth of a soldiour, that, if ever he felte anye mocion in hymselfe to doe hym the least good of the worlde, his desyer was double to requite it; proferinge herewith, for a further shewe of his good meaninge and declaration of fayth, to racke his powre on his behalfe, so farre fourth as eyther lyfe, lyving, or honour, woulde beare him. But he whose desyer tended not to things impossible, nor soughte to maintaine warre againste the heavens, reapposinge muche for himselfe in the offer of his frinde, thought the conquest was halfe wone when he had promised his assistaunce. And because ther lacked nothing but to utter his grieffe, he tolde him that the thyng he desyered woulde bringe advauncement to them bothe. ‘And because,’ saith he, ‘I will cleare the doubte whiche seames to trouble you, you shall understande that the beautye, gyftes of grace, and other honest partes in your syster, have so inchaunted my senses, that, havynge alredye loste the use of my former lybertie, I can not estesones be restored without the spedye assistaunce of her good will: neyther have I other powre of myselfe, or consolation in my present extremitye, then suche as is derived of the hope which I have hereafter to enjoye her as my lawfull wyfe. For, otherwayes, I am as voyde of foule meanynge to worke her dishonour for the fervent love I beare her, as free from intente to procure so greate a spot of infamie to the house whiche norrishd you both in so great honour. And, to be plaine with you, the glymerynge glances of her twinklynge eyes, together with a princely majestie which nature hath lente her above the rest of the dames of our dayes, hath made my hart more assaltable and apte to admitt parley, then eyther the noyse of the canon or terrour of the enemye, howe greate so ever they have appeared, have hertofore feared me: whiche makes me thinke that ther is eyther som celestial or divine mysterie shrowded under the vayle of her beautye, making me therby yelde her honor in hope of preferment; or els, by the angry consent of my cursed destines, it is shee that is appointed to paie th’interest of my former lybertie, in transformynge my auncient quiet into a thousand anoyes

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE
IV

of uneasie tolleracion. And, albeit I have hetherto reserved the maydenhed of my affection, and lyved no lesse free from th'amarous delites or desyers of women, yet being nowe overtaken and tyed in the chaines of true affection, I had rather become captive, and yelde myselfe prisoner in the pursute of so fayre a ladye, then to have the honor of the greatest victorye that ever happened to captayne, by prowesse, or pollicie, or dynt of cruell sworde of his valiaunt soldiours. Wherefore, as your authoritie wyth your syster, is rather to commaunde then entreat, and by the frendshippe whiche hath remained indissoluble betwene us from the begynnyng, never gyvyng place to any peryll what so ever it were, I conjure you, and as my last requeste beseche you, to ayde me herin so farfurth as your diligence maye seame to woorke my desyer to effecte.' Wherunto the Modonoyse replyed wyth greate thanks for the honor he offred hym and his syster, whome he halfe promised alreddie to frame accordyng to his expectation, promysinge hymselfe a greate good happ, not onely in entryng into allyaunce wyth so noble a gentleman, but also that he shoulde be the worker of the same. Wheruppon embracyng eche other—the one glad to see so happy a successe lyke to folowe his busines, the other no lesse joyfull to have so fytt a meane to manifest his frendshipp towards his frende—departed with semblable contentement;—the one to his lodging with a thousand hammors in his heade till he sawe the effecte of his dryfte, the other with no lesse grieffe of minde till he had performed the expectation of his charge. Wherein, he began immediatlye to practise wyth hys syster, whome he founde of a contrary opinion, excusyng herselfe wyth the care she had of her daughter, whome, she sayed, she would neyther leave alone, nor commit herselfe to the order and government of straungers, at whose handes there is as great doubte of good entratye, as small helpe or hope of amedement, beinge once made their vassall and subject by lawe of maryage. 'Besides (syr),' saith she, not without some teares, 'it is not yet a yere synce I lost hym, whom if I loved by awe beinge onlyve, I oughte with no lesse duty to honor after his death. Neyther colde I avoyde the juste murmure

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

and ordinary suspicion of the people, yf I should seame more hastye to yelde my affection to another, then readye to perform my duetye and ceremonies of dule to him that is dead; and that within the yere afore the funerall be fully ended. The widowes lyfe is also pure of itselfe, bounde to no care nor controlement of any, and so acceptable before God, that th'apostle doubteth not to accompte her amonge the number of the religious, yf, after she have once tasted of mariage and restored agayne to her lybertie, she content herselfe wyth the fyrste clogge or burden of bondage, lyvinge after in ymitacion of true vertue. Besides the holy man Sainct Augustin diswadeth all wydowes eftesones to marie, advisinge them to mortifie suche mocions as the fleshe is apte to sturre uppe and norrishe, by contemplacion, and prayer, and true sinceritie of lyfe; saynge further that they are accompted afore God amongst the number of chaste and pure virgins. And because it may bee, peradventure, th'oppinion of some, that the burden of widowed is grevous and almost intollerable unto me—presuming the same rather by the greenes of my youth (not yet confirmed in rypnes of yeres and discretion) then upon any good or assured grounde to justifie theyr opinion—I assure you I feele myselfe so plentifully assisted with the spirite of grace, that I doubte no more to withstande all temptations and vaine assaultes which the wicked instigations of the flesh may here after minister unto me then heretofore in tender yeres, when nature denied anye such mocion to stur in me, I lived free and voyde of such provocation. And for end, good brother, my hart, devininge diverslye of the successe of this mariage, threatneth a further mischief to fall upon me, and to late a repentance for you that is the unfortunat causer of the same.' Here her brother, knowing it a fault in all women to here themselves well spoken of, and yet a chiefe meane to wynne them to fede their humour with flattering praies, began to joine with her in commendacion of her honestie, affirmynge her chaste conversation to bee no lesse meritorious since she was wydowe then her pure virginie generally allowed and praysed of all men afore she was married. 'Which is the chifest cause,' said he, 'that the captayne desiereth in

DISCOURSE

IV

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE IV honest sorte to possess you.' But touching any sinister successe that might follow this sacred league of lawfull matrimony—as she seamed to predestinate within her selfe—he ministred persuasions to the contrary, alledginge the same to be a superstitious follye attributed to the auncientes of olde tyme, to calculat their good or ill successe by the tunes or charme of byrdes, or sometime by the sodaine encounter of beastes, or suche men as they loked not for, arguing the same to bee such absolut signes of il lucke that commonly they wolde refraine from theyr affayres al that day. 'And touching the murmur and suspicion of the people, whose tongs although they be naturally tipte with the metal of slaunder, yet ought you as litell,' saith he, 'feare their malice, as care for their grudge; consideringe your acte is no lesse acceptable afore God, then tollerable by the positive lawes of man. Neither can they but judge well of your doinges, and like better of your choyce, seinge you are woede with great importunyties, and wone by one that is of your owne qualitie and nothings inferior to you in vertue or noblenes of race. But if you sticke of any ceremonies which you have yet to perform to him that is deade, youre error is greater thenne you maye justefye, and your wisdome lesse then is necessarye in suche a case: neyther is the voice of the multitude in that respecte of suche contynauce, but tyme can take it awaye, and a wonder lasteth not for ever. And, for my parte, I hope you wil conferre my present meaninge in this matter with the longe experienced fayth and affection whiche heretofore you have noted in me. Besides, I colde not avoyde th'imputacion of a monster and enemy to nature, if I shold not bee as carefull of your quiet as of my own life; praying you for ende, and as my laste request, to repose your selfe whollie uppon my faythe, and frendshippe and fidelytye of him who honoreth you with no lesse then his lyfe and al that he hath.' Wherwith he so muche prevailed over his obedyent syster, that she, beinge unhappely overcom with his vehement importunyties, condissended very willingly to his unfortunat request: which after became the perentory destruction of the pore wydow, leaving to late and miserable a repentance to her brother.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

IV

Touchinge
dyvynacion
of the mynd.

Albeit, afore I procede to the ceremonies of her unfortunat mariage, I thoughte good to tel unto you in this place th' oppynion of mine author touchinge the dyvynacion of the spirite of man; 'who' (saythe hee) 'albeit, by a secret instincte and vertue of the mynde, is hable some times to presage that will fall, and the soule (beinge devine of itselfe) dothe also prognosticate dyversly of the future chaunces and chaunges of thinges; yet the bodye (beinge the house or harborer of the mynd) framed of the substance of claye, or a thing of more corruption, doth so prevaile and overcome the qualytyes and gyftes of the mynde, in casting a myste of darkenes afore our understandinge, that the soule is not only barred to expose the frutes of revelacion, but also it is not beleved when she prognosticates a trothe. Neyther is it in the power of man to shone or shrinke frome that whiche the foreknowledge of the highest hath already determined upon us, and much lesse to prevent or withstande the sentence of hym whose dome is as certeine as himselfe is truthe. Wherein, because I am sufficiently justefyed by th' authorities of diverse histories, as wel sacred as prophane, I will not stande here to enlarge the prooffe with copy of examples, but referr you to the readinge of the sequeile of this woful ladye, who, although her fate was reveyled to her afore, yet was she denied to shone the destenye and sharppe judgement whiche the heavens were resolved to thunder uppon her.'

But nowe to our pourpose. Th' agreement thus made betwene the fayre Greke ladye and Don Spado, the valiant capteine, ther lacked no thing for consomacion of the mariage but th' assistance of the rites and auncient ceremonies appoynted by order of holly Church; whiche the capteine forgat not to procure with all expedicion of tyme. And, for the more honour and decoracion of the feaste, he had ther the presence of the Marques of Mantua, beinge there, not so much for the honour of the brydegroome, as to testefye to the open face of the world the arnest affection he beare to her fyrst husbände Barzo, whom he accompted no lesse deare unto hym for credytt and truste, then the nearest frende of his blod. But nowe this Albanoyes enjoyeng thus the frutes of his desier, coldc not so wel brydel his present pleasure, nor

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE
IV

conceile the singuler contentment he conceived by the encounter of his new mystres, but, in publike show, began to prate of his present felicitye; arguinge the same to be of greater moment, then if he had ben frankly restored to the tytle and dygnitie of a kingdome; geving Fortune also her peculiar thankes, that had kepte this good torne in store for him, saying that she cold not have honored him with a greater preferment then to put him into the possession of her who was without a second in al Europe. But as in every thing excesse is hurtful, bringinge with it a doble discomoditie—I meane both a sourfet to the stomake by the pleasure we delite in, and a jelouse loathing of the thing we chiefly love and hold most dere—so the extreme and superfluitie of hoate love of this fonde husbando towards his wife, began, within the very month of the mariage, to converte itselfe into a contrary disposition, not much unlike the loving rage of the she ape towards her yonge ones; who, as the poetes do affirme, doth use to chuse among her whelpes one whom she loves best, and keping it alwaies in her armes doth cherish and loll it in such rude sorte that, or she is ware, she breketh the boanes and smothereth it to death, killing by this meanes with overmuch love the thing which yet wold live if it were not for th' excesse of her affection. In like sort this Albanoyse, doating without discrecion upon the desyer of his newe lady, and rather drowned beastely in the superfluitie of her love then waighing rightly the meryte and vertue of true affection, entred into such tearmes of fervent jelowsie, that every fle that wafteth afore her made hym sweate at the browes with the suspicion he had of her bewty. Wherin he suffered himselfe to be so much subject and overcome with the rage of this follie, that, according to the jelowse humor of th' Ytalyan, he thoughte every man that loked in her face, wente aboute to grafte hornes in his forehead. Oh! smal discrecion and lesse wisdome, in one that ought, with the shappe and forme, to merite the name and vertue of a man! What sodaine chaung and alteracion of fortune seames nowe t' assayle this valiant captein, who earst loved loyallie within the compas of raison, and now, doating without discrecion, thinketh himselfe one of the forqued ministeres of Corn-

The propertie
of a she ape
in embrasing
her yonge
ons.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

IV

waile ! And, albeit I must confesse unto you that the more rare and precious a thing is of itselfe, the more diligence and regarde ought we to use to preserve and kepe it in good estate ; yet a wise and chast woman being one of the rarest things of the world and special gift of God, ought not to be kept in the mew, nor garded with curious and continual wach, and much lesse atended upon with the jelouse eyes of Argus : for like shee that waigheth her honor and life in indifferent ballance, not meaning to exchange the one but with the losse of the other, is not easely corrupted by any sugred traine of flattering love, so the restraint of the lyberty of womenne, together with a distruste procedinge of none occasion, is the chiefeeste meane to seduce her that ells hath vowed an honeste and integrety of lyfe even untill the ende of her naturall dayes. And in vaine goeth hee aboute to make his wife honest, that eyther lockes her in his camber or fylles his house full of spyes to note her doinges, consideringe the just cause he gyves her hereby to be revenged of the distruste he hath of her without occasion ; seinge with al the nature of some women is to enlarge their libertie that is abridged them in doinge the thinge they are forbidden, more in disspyte of the distruste of their folyshe husbandes, then for any appetyt or expectacion of other contentment to themselves. Neyther hath this folyshe humor of jelowsy so much power to enter into the hart of the vertuous and wise man ; who neyther wyll give his wife such cause to abuse herselfe towardes hym, nor suspect her wythout great occasyon, nor yet gyve judgement of any evill in her, withoute a sewer grounde and manifest prooffe. And yet is he of suche governemente for the correction of such a falte, that he had rather cloke and disgest it with wisdome then make publication with open ponishment in the eye of the slaunderous worlde. By whiche rare patience and secret dissimulation, he dothe not onely choke the mouth of the slaunderor, buryinge the faulte with the forgetfulnes of the facte, but also reclaymes her to an assured honestie and fayth hereafter, that earst had abused him by negligence and yl fortune. But he which pennes his wife in the highest vaulte of his house, or tieth a bell at her sleve because he may heare

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE

IV

whether she goeth, or when he takes a long journey paintes a lambe of her bellie, to know if she plaie false in his absence—these sleightes, I saye, do not only deceive him that deviseth theym, but also gives him for his travell the true title of cookeholde. In like sorte, what greater sign or argument can a man geve of his owne follie, then to beleve that to be true, which is but doutfull, and yeldinge rashelye to the resolution and sentence of his owne conceites, thinks his wife as light of the seare and apt to deceive him, as he is readie to admit synister suspicion; which procedes but of an ymperfection in hymselfe, judginge the disposition of an other, by his own complexion. Which was one of the greatest faltes in this valyante Albanoyse; who, fearing even nowe that which he nede not to dowte, began to stande in awe of his owne shadow, perswadinge himselfe that his wife was no lesse liberall of her love towards others then to him, and that the benefit of her bewtie was as common to straungers as to himselfe. Albeit, the good ladye, espyeng well enough the greefe of her husband, was not ydle, for her parte, to studie the meanes to please him, and also to frame her life in such wise every waye, that her chaste and discrete government towards hym mighte not only remove the vaile of his late suspicion, but also take awaye the thicke miste of frantike jelowsie that put him in suche disquiet, and made him so farre excede the lymites and bondes of discrecion. Albeit, her honeste endeavor herein received a contrarye effecte; and as one borne under a crabbed constellacion, or ordeined rather to beare the malice of a froward desteinie, she colde not devise a remedie for his disease, nor any hearbe to purge his suspicious humor; but the more she sought to prefer a show of sinceritie and honestie of life, the more grew the furye and rage of his perverse fancie, thinking the compainye and fellowship of his wife to be as indifferente to others as peculiar to himselfe.

What life were like to the married mans state, or pleasures semblable to the joyes of the bedde, if either the one or the other might be dispensed with all from the furye of frantique jellowsie? Or amongst a thousand inconveniences which

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

IV

only the married man doth fynde, what greater mischief maye be more for the dissolution of the mutuall tranquillitie of them bothe, then where the one loves unfaynedlie, and the other is doubtfull without cause? But the ease and quiet of men are of so small a moment, and their common pleasures so enterlarded with an ordinary mishappe, that ther is as smal hold of the one, slippinge away with the shortnes of tyme, as undowted assurance to have the other a common gieste, and haunt us in all our doinges, not leaving us till he hath sene us laide in the pit and longe bedde of rest. Wherof I have here presented you a litle prooffe in the picture and person of this selly Albanoyse; who, beginnyng as you have harde to enter into some tearmes of jellowsie wyth his wife—with whome, notwithstandinge, he had consumed certeine monethes in such pleasures as mariage doth allowe—began to grow more fervant in that furye thenne either his cause did require or wisdom ought to suffer. Wherwith, settinge abroch the vessel of that poyson, forgat not for hys fyrste endeavor to dogge the doinges of hys wife with secret spies in every corner, to abridge her libertie in goinge abrode, and barr the accesse of any to come to her; kepinge, notwithstandinge, no lesse watche and warde abowte her chamber thenne the good soldiour uppon his trenche, or circumspecte capteine uppon the walles of hys fortresse: whyche broughte the selly ladye into such sorow, that the state of the caytife and slave of the gallye, bounde to his ore with a chayne of unreasonable biggnes, or hee that by harde sentence of the lawe dothe lye miserablie at the bottom of a pryson all the dayes of his lyfe, seamed of more easie regarde thenne the harde condition of her presente state. Albeit, true vertue hathe suche operation and effecte of herselfe, that howe grevouslye so ever the worlde dothe persecute her, or seke to crucifye her wyth the malice of menne, yet canne they not so kepe her under by anye force they canne devise, but certeine streames and sparkes wyll burste oute nowe and thenne, and showe herselfe at laste, as shee is hable to wythstande the violence of any mortall affliction. Whereof an effecte appears here in the sequeile of this Greke ladye; who, notinge the disposition of her husbände, overcharged wyth a mad

True vertue
will alwayes
yelde frutes
according to
the goodnes
of the thing.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE IV humor of wrong conceites, gave judgemente ymedyatlye of his disease, and beyng not hable utterlye to expulse his newe fever, studied by her indevor to inferr a moderacion of his passion. Wherin, for her part, she forgat not to make pacience her chieffest defence, agaynst the folish assaultes of his wilful follies; not only requitinge his extraordinary rage and fits of furie wyth a dutifull humylitye and obedience of a wife, but also ceassed not to love him no lesse then her honour and dutie bounde her therunto; hopinge, with th'assistance of some conveniente tyme, and her discrete behavior towards hym, both to take awaye the disease, and mortifye the cause of his evill. She seamed neyther to reprehend his falte openly, nor with other tearmes thenne argued her great humilitie; and for herselfe, howe evill so ever he intreated her, she gave an outwarde showe of thankefull contentmente. And when it was his pleasure to shutt her close in a chamber, as a birde in the cage, shee refused not his sentence, but, embrasinge the gifte of her presente fortune, toke suche consolation as the harde condition of her case wolde admitt; givinge God thanks for his visitation, and cravinge with like intercession to have her husbande restored to the use of his former wittes. Albeit, all these dutifull showes of obedience, and pacient digesting of his unnaturall discourtesies, together with a rare and redie disposition in her to frame herselfe whollie to th'appetit of his will, prevailed no more to enlarge her libertie, or redeme her from the servile yoke of close ymprisonement, then to reclayme his hagarde mynde to th'understandinge of reason, or restore the traunce of his frantique humor; raging the more (as it seamed) by the incredible constaneye he noted in this mirror of modestie, obedience, wisdom, and chastetie: whose example, in theym all deserves certainlye to be graven in pillars of eternetie, and honge upp in tables of golde, in every pallace and place of estate, to th'ende that you ladies of oure tyme, maye learne, by ymitacion of her order and government, to attaine to the like perfection of vertue: whiche she lefte as a speciall patterne to you all; to th'end, also, that if any of you, by like misfortune, do fal into the daunger of semblable accidentes, you may learne

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

here th' order of your government, in the like affaires, and also to suppress the rage of jelowsie, rather by vertue then force; which commonly is the foundation of skandale and slaunder, divorcemente and violacion of mariage, wherupon doth consequently ensue civil discencions, and utter subvercion of houses of antiquitie. But nowe to the place of our historie.

DISCOURSE

IV

This frantique Albanoyse and jelouse capteine—being one of the traine of the Lord James Trivoulse, a great favorer of the faction of Gebalyno in Italye, and at that tyme governor of the duchie of Millayne, under the Frenche Kinge Loys, the thirde of that name—whether it were to make a further proffe, of the pacience of his wife, or by absence to mortefye and forgett his fonde opinion conceived without cause, retired upon a suddaine to Newcastel, the court and ordenarie place of abode, of the sayd Lord Tryvoulse. Which, albeit was of harde disgestion, to the ladie for a time, yet, being not unacquainted with such chaunces, and no prentise in the practise of her husbände, retired to her auncient patience, and contentment by force, dyssimling with a new greefe and secrete sorowe, this newe discourtesie, to th'ende that her waspische husbände should take no exceptions to her in any respect, but fynde her in this as the former stormes, bent wholly to obey th'appetit of his will, and not to mislike with that he fyndes necessarye to be don.

This Trivoulse hadde not spent many monethes in Fraunce, but there was commenced informacion agaynste him to the king, that he was revolted from the Frenche and become frende to the Swytzers, and sworne to their seignourye and faction. Wherwyth, ymediatlye, Fame (the common carier of tales) filled all eares of Milan, and the province there about; with this further addicion, that the king for that cause, had sent him headles to his grave. Albeit as Fame is rather a messenger of lyes, then a treasure of truthe, and rather to be harde then beleved, so this brute, beinge not true in the laste, did ymporte a certeine credit in the fyrste; for Tryvoulse, not liking to live in the displeasure of his prince, abandoned his charg and came into Lumbardy, wher, beinge sommoned by the messenger of

Fame the
common
caryor of
tales.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE IV deathe, gave place to nature and dyed; who, beinge the onely maister and meyntheynor of the Albanoyse capteine, whilst hee lived, colde not easely be forgotten of him after his death. For, after his departure was past the general doubte of the people, and eche voice resolved that he was laide in hys grave, Don Capitaino Spado, resolved whollye into teares, seamed here to pass the mistery of a newe traunce; whiche, with the freshe remembraunce of his auncient harme, and greene wounde of unworthie jelowsye, bledynge yet in his minde, broughte hym in that case, that he neyther desyred to live, nor doubted to die, and yet in dispaire of them both. His solace of the daye was converted into teares, and the howers of the night went awaye in visions and hollowe dreames. He loathed the companye of his frendes, and hated the thynges that shoulde susteine nature. Neither was he contented with the presente, nor cared for the chaunce of future tyme. Which sodaine alteration in straunge maner, drive his carefull wife into no lesse astonishment then she had cause. And being ignorant of the occasion, she was also voide of consolation; which doubled her greefe, till tyme opened her at laste a meane to communicate familiarly wyth him in this sorte:—‘Alas! syr’ (sayeth she) ‘to what ende serve these pininge conceites, foringe a generall debilytie thorow al your partes? Or why do you languishe in griefe without discoverynge the cause of your sorowe to suche as holde your health no lesse deare then the sweete and pleasant taste of their owne lyfe? From whence commes this often change of complexion accompanied with a disposition of malencolicke dompes arguing your inward and fretting care of minde? Why staye you not in time the source of your skorching sighes, that have alreddie drayned your bodye of his wholsome humors appointed by nature to give sucke to th’intrals and inward partes of you? And to what ende serveth this whole river of teares, flowinge by such abundance from your watery eyes almost worne awaye with weeping? Is your greefe growen great by continuance of time, or have you conceived some mislike of newe? Yf your house be out of order in any sorte, or that want of dutie or diligence in me procureth

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

IV

your grudge, declare the cause, to th'ende the faulte maye be reformed in me, and you restored to your auncient order of quiet, and we both enjoye a mutuall tranquillitie as apperteineth.' But he that labored of an other disease then is incident commonly to men of good governement, absolved her of all faultes, or other mislikes he founde in the state of his house, or other his affaires committed to her order, and lesse lacke of her diligence to make declaracion of her dutie to th'utermoste. 'But alas!' saith he (with a depe sighe derived of the fretinge dolour of his minde, and doubled twice or thrise within his stomacke afore he coulde utter it) 'what cause of comfort or consolation hath he to lyve in this world, from whom the malice of destenie hath taken the chiefeste pillor of his life? Or to what ende serveth the fruicion or interest of longer yeres in this vale of unquietnes, when the bodie abhorreth alredie the longe date of his abode heare? Or why shold not this *soma*, or masse of corruption, whiche I received of the world, bee dismissed to earth, and my soule have leave to passe into the other worlde, to shonne this double passion of present torment whiche I feele by the deathe of my deare frende? Ah! my deare ladye and loyall wife, my grieve is so great, that I dye to tell you the cause, and yet the veray remembrance presents me with treble torments. Wherin, I must confess unto you, that since the death of the late Lorde Ihon Tryvulso, I have had so lytle desyer to live, that all my felicitie is in thinking to die, neyther can ther be any thinge in the world more acceptable to me then death; whose hower and time, if they were as certeine as himselfe is moste sewer to comme in the ende, I could somewhat satisfye the great desyer I have to die, and moderate the rage of my passion in thinking of the shortnes of the dome that should give ende to my dyeng ghost and unrulye sorowes together. Besides, waighing th'infinite miseries of our time, (accompanieng us even from the wombe of concepion) with the reaste and reapeose which dead men do finde, and knowing withall how muche I am in the debte of him that is dead, I can not wishe a more acceptable thinge then the spedie approche and ende of my dayes, to th'ende that, being denied the viewe of his presence here, I

Albeit death is most certeine yet the hower and time of his comming is not knowen.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE may folow him in th'other world; where, participating
IV indifferently such good and evil as falleth to his share, I may
witness with what dutiful zeale and affectioned harte I
sought to honor and serve hym in all respects.' But the
ladye, that sawe as farre into the disease of her husbände,
as his phizicion into his uryne, knowynge well enoughe
that he dyd not languishe so muche for the desyer of hym
that was dead as the ticklish humour of jelowsye troubled
hym, was content to admit his collours (howe fyne so ever
they were) as well to preferr her dutie to th'uttermoste, as
also to avoyde imputacion or cause of suspicion on her parte.
Wherwith, entring into tearmes of persuasion, she added
also this kynde of consolacion folowinge:—

The ladye
comfortes her
husbände.

'More do I greve, sir,' sayth she, 'wyth the small care
you seame to take of yourselfe then the tearmes of your
disease do trouble me, consideringe the same procedes of so
slender occasion, that the veray remembrance of so great an
oversight ought to remove the force and cause of your acci-
dent. Admit your grieffe were great indeede, and your
disease of no lesse importance, yet ought you so to bridle
this wilful rage and desyere to dye, that, in eschewing to
prevent the wyl and set hower of the Lorde, you seeke not
to further your fatall ende by usynge unnaturall force
against yourselfe, making your beastly will the blodye sacri-
fize of your bodie; whereby you shalbe sewer to leave to the
remeinder of your house, a crowne of infamie in the judge-
ment of the worlde to come, and put your soule in hazarde
of grace afore the troane of justice above. You knowe, syr,
I am sewer, that in this transitorye and painful pilgrimage,
there is nothing more certeine then death, whom, albeit wee
are forbidden to feare, yet oughte wee to make a certeine
accompt of his comming: neyther is it any other thinge
(according to the scripture) then the minister and messenger
of God, executynge his infallible wil upon us wretches, spar-
inge neyther age, condicion, nor state. It is he that geves
ende to our miserie heare, and saffe conduyte to passe into
the other worlde. And assone as we have taken possession
of the house of reste, he shooteth the gates of all annoy
againste us, fedinge us (as it were) with a swete slomber, or

Death the
messenger
and minister
of God.

The grave is
the house of
reste.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

IV

pleasant sleepe, untill the last sommonce of generall resurrection. So that, syr, methinkes they are of the happie sorte, whome the great God vouchsafeth to call to his kyngdome, exchanginge the toiles, and manifolde cares incident to the creatures of this worlde, with the pleasures of his paradise and place of reape that never hath ende. And touchinge your devocion to him that was dead, with vaine desyer to visit his ghoste in the other worlde, persuadyng the same to procede of a debte and dutifull desyer that you have to make yet a further declaracion of your unfained minde towards him, I assure you, (syr) I am more sorye to see you subject to so great a follie then I feare or expect the effecte of your dreame, for as it seames but a ridle, procedinge of the vehemencie of your sicknes, so I hope you will directe the sequile by sage advise, convertinge the circumstance into ayre, without further remembrance of so foolish a matter. Wherin also I hope you wyll suffer the wordes of the scripture to direct you; who, allowinge small ceremonies to the dead, forbides us to yelde any debte or dutie at all to suche as be alredie passed out of the worlde, and muche lesse to sacrificyze ourselves for their sakes upon their tombes (accordyng to the supersticious order of the barbarians in olde time, remeynyng at this daye in no lesse use amonge the people of the weste worlde) but rather to have their vertues in due veneracion, and, treadyng in the steppes of their examples, to imytate theyr order with like integretye of lyfe. And for my parte' (saith she) dyenge her garmetes with the droppes of her waterye eyes, 'provyng to late what it is to loase a husbnde, and to forgett hym whome bothe the lawe of God and nature hathe gyven me as a seconde parte of myselfe, to lyve wyth mutuall contentement untill the dissolucion of oure sacred bonde by the heavye hande of God, am thus farre resolved in my selfe, protestyng to performe no lesse by Hym that lyveth, that yf the furye of your passion prevaile above your resistance, or your disease growe to suche extreame tearmes that wyll not be otherwayes aunswered but that you muste yelde to hys sommonce and dye, I wyl not lyve to lament the losse of my second husbnde, nor use other dule in the funerall

A ceremonie amongst the barbarians to sacrafise themselves uppon the tombes of their deade frendes.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE of youre corps, then to accompanye it to the grave in a sheete or shroode of like attire. For youre eyes shall no sooner cloase their liddes, or loase the lyght of this worlde, then theis handes shalbe readye to performe the effecte of my promisse; and the bell that gyveth warnyng of your last hower, shall not ceasse his doleful knil, til he have published with like sound the semblable ende of your deare and lovyng wyfe.—Whose simple and franke offer here (openyng a most convenient occasion for her wylfull husbnde to disclose the true cause of hys disease) prevailed so muche over his doubtfull and waveryng mynde, that, dismissing even then his former dissimulacion, he embrated her, not without suche abundance of teares and unruly sighes, that for the tyme they tooke awaie the use of his tounge. Albeit, beinge delivered of his traunce, and restored to the benefit of his speche, he disclosed unto her the true cause and circumstance of his greefe in this sorte:—

‘Albeit, since the time of my sicknes’ (saith he) ‘you have scene what distresse and desolation have passed me, wyth fyttes of straunge and diverse disposition, merveilyng no lesse (I am sewer) from what fountaine have flowed the *symptomes* of so rare a passion, wherein also your continuall presence and viewe of my weake state is sufficientlye hable to recorde the whole discourse of my disease, yet are you neyther partaker of my payne, nor privye to the principall causes of so straunge an evill. Neyther have I bene so hardie to discover them unto you, because I have ben hetherto doubtful of that whereof your laste wordes have fullye absolved me. And now, being weakened with the wearines of tyme and sicknes, in suche sorte as nature hath ridd her handes of me and gyven me over to the order of death—who is to spare me no longer but to utter these laste wordes unto you—I accompte it a special felicitie in my harde fortune, that, in th’oppenyng of the true causes of my grefe, I may cloase and seale up the laste and extreame tearme of my lyfe. And, because I wil cleare in few wordes the misterie which seames to amaze you, you shall note that there be iii onely ministers and occasyons of my disease; whereof the firste (and of leaste importance) is for the death

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

of my late lorde and maister, Don Ihon Tryvoulso, whereof you are not ignorant; the second (excedinge the firste in greatnes of grefe and force againste me) is to thinke that the rigour of my destinies, and violence of sicknes, yeldyng me into the handes of death, will dissolve and breake by that meanes, the league of longe and loyall love whiche from the beginnyng my harte hath vowed unto you; but the thirde and laste (of a more strange qualitie then eyther of the reste) is to thinke that when I am dead, and by time worne out of your minde, another shal enjoye the sweete and pleasaunt benefit of that devine beautie of yours, whiche oughte to serve but for the dyet of the gods, the simple viewe whereof seames hable (yf it were possible) to make me suffer the martiredome of ii deaths.' Whereunto she replied with persuacions to drive hym from his fonde devise, profering herselfe eftesones to dye for companie wherin (callynge the majestie of the Highest to witnes) she protested againe that, if he wolde not be reclaimed from his desyer to dye within a veray shorte moment of tyme, she woulde bee as redye to yelde death his tribute as he. All whiche she inferred (I thinke) rather to feede the tyme, then of intent to performe the effecte of her offer, havinge the lyke opynion of her husbände, whome she thoughte alwayes to have suche power to repress the evill sprite that possessed hym, that he woulde not become the unnaturall morderer of hymselfe, and muche lesse execute the lyke rage on her. But alas! the infortunat ladye brewed heare the brothe of her owne bane, and spon the thredd of her owne destruction, for fallynge nowe unhappelye into the malice of her destenie, thinkyng nothinge lesse then of the secret ambushe of mortall treason her husband had layed for her, went unhappelye to bed wyth hym the same nighte; where, for his parte (preferinge in his face a shew of fayned contentement and consolation to the eye) he forced a further quiete of mynde by the joye he ymaged in the acte he ment to do, but chieflve for that he had devised howe th'innocent ladye (throughe the rage of his villainy) sholde bee forced to an effecte of her promise. For the spedie execution wherof, they had not bene longe in bedd together, but he rise from her, faynyng

DISCOURSE

IV

The captaine riseth to fetche his dagger to kyll his wyfe.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE a desier to performe the necessitie of nature in the closset or
IV chamber of secretes; his erraund in dede being to fetche his dagger, which (without makyng her privye) he conveyed under the bolster of his bed, beginnyng even then to preferre a preamble afore the parte he ment to playe. For, fallinge from his former complaintes of sicknes, he retired into tearmes of extreme frenezy and madnes, brainge out such groanes and sighes of hideus disposicion, with owlyng, cryeng, and foaminge at the mouth, like one possessed with an evill sprit, that who had scene his often change of coollor and complexion in his face, his ghastly regardes arguinge ententes of desperacion, and his eyes (flaming with furye) sonke into his head, with the order of his passion every waye, mighte easely have judged the desyer of his harte to be of no smal importance, and the thyng he went about neither common nor commendable. Wherein he was assisted with iii enemies of diverse disposicions, love, jealousie, and death: the least of the whiche is sufficient of himselfe to make a man chafe in his harmeys, and take away the courage of his hart in the middest of the combat. For the one presented a certaine feare by reason of the horrour of the acte; the other sewed (as it were) for an abstinence, or at least a moderacion, of the crueltie he had commenced against his innocent wif; but the third, being the beginner of al, and excedinge the rest in power, wolde not dismisse him from the stage till he had playd th' uttermost acte of his malicious tragedie.

Marke here (good ladyes) the desolation of this unfortunat gentlewoman, and dispose yourselves to teares on the behalfe of hir distresse. Wherin, certeinlye, you have no lesse reason to helpe to bewaile her wretched chaunce, then juste occasion to joyne in generall exclamation againste the detestable acte of her tyrannous husband; who, disclayminge even nowe his former state and condition of a man, retires into th' abite of a monster, and cruell enemye to nature; and in convertinge the vertue of his former love, and remembrance of the sondrie pleasures he had heretofore receyved of his deare and lovyng wyfe, into present rage and unnaturall furye (far excedinge the savage and brutishe maner of the tiger,

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

lyon, or libarde, bredd in the desertes of Affrike, the common
norse of monsters and creatures cruell without reason)
whettyng his teeth for the terrible suggestion of the devill,
who at th'instante put into his hande the dagger; where-
with, after he had embraced and kissed her, in such sorte as
Judas kissed our Lorde the same night he betrayed him, he
saluted her with ten or xii estockados, one in the necke of
another in diverse partes of her bodye, renewynge the con-
flict with no lesse number of blowes in her head and armes;
and because no parte shoulde escape free from the stroke of
his malice, he visyted her white and tender legges, with no
lesse rage and furye then the rest. Wherewith, beholdinge
in her diverse undoubted argumentes of death, began the
lyke warre wyth hymselfe, usinge the same meane and minis-
ters with his owne handes, enbrewed yet with the bloode of
his innocent wyfe; shewyng (notwithstandyng this horrible
part and acte of dispaire) diverse and sondrye signes of
speciall gladnes and pleasure in his face, wherin he con-
tynued till the laste and extreame gaspe of lyfe—chieffie for
that he sawe him accompanied to death with her whome he
was not hable to leave behinde hym on lyve, and who,
beinge overcharged (as you have harde) with the number of
woundes, the violence whereof (prevailinge farre above the
resistance of lyfe) did presse her so muche with the hastie
approche of death, that the want of breath abridged her
secret shryft and confession to God, with lesse leasure to
yeld her innocent soule (wyth humble praier) into the handes
of her Redemer, and commende the forgevenes of her synnes
to the benefit of his mercie. Only she had respyte (with
great ado to speake) to give order that her bodie mighte
be layde in the tombe of her firste husbände, Signeur Barzo.
But the cursed and execrable Albanoyes (so whollie pos-
sessed with the devill that the gyfte of grace was denied
him) abhorred to the laste mynute of his lyfe the remem-
brance of repentance; for, laughinge (as it were) at the
fowlenes of the facte even untill life left him senceles and
voyde of breathe, he commended his carkes to the gredie
javes of ravenous wolves, serving also as a fyt praie for the
venemous serpentes and other crepunge wormes of the earthe,

DISCOURSE

IV

Here he
killeth his
wyf.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE and his soule to the reprobate socyetic of Judas and Cayne,
IV with other of th'infernall crewe.

The worthie ende of this wicked wretche argueth the juste rewarde of the evill disposed and suche as are unhappellie dropped out of the favor of God, the ordenarye successe of those enterprises that are begon without the consente of wisdom or raison, but chiefly th'effectes and fortune of such as (blinded with the vaile of their owne wil and dymned with the myste of follye) do reape so muche for them selves in the opinion of their owne witte, that, detestinge good counsell and advise of the wise, doo credit onlye the conceite of their owne fancie, whiche (as a blinde guide) doth leade them into infynit miseries and laborinth of endles annoy, where there is no dispense of their follie, but losse of libertie, perpetual infamie, and sometime punishmente by untimely deathe. Whyche, as they bee worthie rewardes for suche as doat so much in their owne wisdom that they accompte the same hable of it selfe to comprehend the whole globe, or compasse the worlde; so the wise man, affore he entreth into any enterprise of waight (beinge carefull for the conveyghe of the same) dothe not onlye compare the ende wyth the beginning, and cast the sequiel and circumstance everye waye, but also, entringe (as it were) into hymselfe, hee makes a view of that which is in hym; and for his better assistance, he will not refuse the advise of his frends, by whiche meanes he is sewer to reape the rewarde of his traveil with treble contentment, and seldom is he punished with to late a repentance. Herewith, also, th'exemple of the wise maryner doth in like sorte advise us; who, coming by fortune or violence of wether upon an unknowen coaste, doth straightway sounde and trye the depth of the river by his plommet and lyne, neyther will he let fall his anker unlesse he be sewer of the fyrmenes of the grounde; whiche, if it do faile him, yet is hee to wythstande the malice of daunger by kepinge the chanell whiche yeldes hym water enoughe: so if this wretched Albanoy hadde made a view of hymselfe and his forces, afore he became subject to the humor of jalouse suspicion, or if he had given correction to his falte in tyme, and suffred reason

A comparison derived of the pollicie whiche the wise mariner or shipmaister doth use.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

to suppress the rage of his follie afore he was grown to tearmes of madnes, he had enjoyed his ladie at pleasure, lyved yet in quiet, and prevented the fowle note of infamie wherewith the gates and posternes of his house will be painted, till th' extreme date of the world; and eschewed the peril of dampnable dispair in killing himselfe, with like violacion and bloddie slaughter of his innocent lady. Whose death, with the straungenes in execution, being once knowen to the multitude, it is to be wondered what generall dule and desolation were in all partes of the citie, how al estates and degres of people spared no sortes of teares nor other dollerous tunes; bewailinge her misfortune, with severall grudges at the malice of her destinies, that, in such cruel maner, toke from amongst them the person of her whose vertues and other ornamentes of God and nature served as a special mirror or lokinge glasse to al ages. Wherin, certeinlie, they had great reason; for a lady or gentlewoman equal with her in conversacion everye way—I meane chaste without argument of dishonestie, devowt and yet hatinge supersticion, bowntiful without wasteful prodigalitie, wise without vaine vaunting, so obediente towardes her husbände as was necessarie, and lastlie lackinge the furniture of no good vertue—can not be to much honored in her life, nor worthely renoumed after her death; as wel for that such rare gifts are no lesse meritorious for the vertues that be in them, then that they serve as special allurementes to provoke younge ladies and gentlewomen (desyrous of like glorye) to ymytat th' example and vertues of them whose due fame is hable to excede the length of time and lyve after deathe; who hathe no power but over our corrupte *soma*, or masse of fleshe, beinge barred to medle wyth the felicitie of the mynde, to whome only the title of perpetuities is due wythout exception. And as her life and deathe ymporte severall vertues, and deserve semblable commendacion (the one for that shee never made showe of mislike, what wronge so ever hee wroughte her; the other in that shee failed not to honor him til the laste hower of his life) so may you also descerne therein ii severall exaumples: the one to warne the lighte and harebrained husbändes not

DISCOURSE

IV

Giftes which ought to appeare in an honest woman.

Death hath no power but over our bodye.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE easelie, or for smal occasions, to enter into suspicion with
IV their wyves; whom they ought to love and honoure no lesse
thenne theimselves; the other to presente unto the ladyes
of oure tyme the due rewarde of wysedome, obedience, and
chastetie, which be the thinges that make this Greeke
lyve after her deathe, beinge worthelye invested
wythe the wreathes of honoure amonge all
the ladies of that contreye.

DISCOURSE

V

SONDRYE PERILLS, happeninge to a yonge
Gentleman of Myllan in the pour-
sewte of his Ladye.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE V

THE ARGUMENT

Love procedes
of the corrup-
cion of our
owne nature.

BECAUSE I have already in diverse places sufficientely deciphered the forces of love, and what effectes he exposeth having once brewed the cuppe of the pleasant poison of our sensual appetyt —whereon whosoever sypbeth, swalloweth justelye the rewarde of such follies—I may the rather be dispensed wythall eftsones to reiterate in this place that whiche earste hathe bene inferred touchinge the awe whiche that passion hathe over the hartes of those whose destenie yeldes them subjecte to so greate an evill. Beinge bolde withall to note as a principle or rule of generalitie, that that infection procedes rather of the corrupcion of our owne nature then of the perfection of the same. Albeit some vaine philosophers are not ashamed to advowche his beginning of the moste perfect partes that are in the spirite of man; wherein I see neyther authoritie to allowe their saing, nor reason to confirme their opinion, onles they will make it meritorious for th' indiscretion and follies whiche appeare in them that participat with such passion. For a familiar testy-monie wherof I have preferred this historie folowing, not only affirminge my former protestacion touchinge the disordinat effectes of love, but also to justefye the opynion of him who makes no difference betwene the devise of love and raginge fytted of frenezy or one posseste with a wicked spirite. For here you maye see a gentleman of Myllan (to enjoy a presence and pleasure of his lady) refuseth not to commit himselfe to manifold daungers, with diverse perillous encounters; whereof the one scamed no lesse mortal then the other, and everye one threatening the end of his life by present morder. Albeit his felicitie defended him from harme, and the perill passed makes him dread a future plunge.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES



NOT longe after Maxymilian's force, by the guide of evill fortune, and wante of good governmente in himselfe, hadde lost the state and seigneurye of Millan, there happened no lesse desolation to the unhappie faction of the Gebelyns; when the power and pollecie of the great Trivolso did not only abandon their naturall soyle and place of abode, dryvinge theym from the possession of their worldlye porcions, but also persecuted their wretched state with suche creweltie, that they were readie to yelde to the somonce of dispare, if it had not bene for a simple proffer of a certeine hope they reposed in th'assistance of th'emprour Maximilian; who, more willing then hable to restore their desolation, pursewed the revenge of their wronge wyth a puissant armye even untill the walls and gates of Millan; where he receyved suche hoat repulses by the valyaunte encounters of Charles, Duke of Burbon (thenne viceroye or deputie to the Frenche kynge) that, paintynge the gates wyth the blod of hys capteines, and leaving the deade bodyes of hys people in witnes of his beyng there, the majestie retorned wythe more commendacion for hys good meanyng thenne fame or glorie of the victorie, leavyng the miserable stradyates (bathed in the teares of their seconde sorowe) to the guide and governemente of their Fortune; who seamed at laste to enter into suche compassion of their miserie, that shee restored the greateste parte not only to the libertie of their contrey and societie of former habytacion, but also to th'use of their goodes and revenues usurped by the enemye. The rest shee devided into diverse corners of Christendom. Som went to Trent, and were sworne the subjectes of Francis Sforce, Duke of Bary: other founde place of abode in the kingdom of Naples. To some she gave passeporte to attempte the devocion of the wholly vicar of Rome; and the rest repaired to Mantua. Amongest whiche crewe or laste company was one Cornelio (upon whom this

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE V historic maketh his chiefest discourse), whom, albeit Fortune had made partaker of her malice amongst the reste of his contreyemen, yet hys mynde, grudging with th'injurye of fate, loste nothing of her entyer and vertue. For notwithstanding hee was of the race of the Sforcians, and chiefest enemye to the usurped government and prowde behavior of the Frenchemen wythin Millan, and that hee had lefte amongstest them his inheritance and goodes to confiscacion, yet was he assisted wyth so fyne a polycyc and great indevor of his mother, that he had sufficient exhibicion to meinteyne his auncient porte and callinge.

And as the statelic viewe and feytur of his complexion and lymys, presented a speciall cominge of nature, lackynge besides no gyfte or qualitie due to a gentleman, and pestered, wythall, wyth no more yeres then were conveniente for the decoration of so seamly a bewtie; so, being the chiefe courtier that hawnted the companie of ladyes, and no lesse welcome amongstest the loftie dames of Millan afore the subvercion of their societie by the crueltie of the Frenchemen, hee made a choise of one from amongstest the reste, whom he failed not to court wyth a contynual proffer of his service, and other offices of humanitie preserybed in the skole of love, untill he thought himselfe sufficiently rampierd in the intralls of her hart, and left her no lesse willinge to yelde a perticipation of affection then himselfe passioned wyth desyer to pursewe the quest and conquere her bewtie. Her name was Plaudina, equall to him in the height of estate, and nothing inferior in the golden giftes and ornamentes of nature. And albeit she had newlie made a prooffe of the married man's pastyme, and offred the flower and first frutes of her virginite upon th'alter of wedlocke; yet the youngnes of her yeres (defending her bewtie from al argumentes of alteracion or chaunge) wolde not suffer the boate and often encounters of her husbände, to ympare any waye the glasse or precious dye of so rare a perfection. Wherein as she was noted the odd peragon of Italy, as wel for that respecte as other ornamentes of majestie incyde to honor, so the commendacion of these vertues seamed not so fyt an instrument to advance her fame and glorye, as presente meanes to procure treble

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

V

passion to the new disquiet of Cornelio; who greved not so muche wyth the sentence of adversitie, as cryed out of the lawe of nature and malice of his presente fortune: for that the one had geven hym a harte to love, and libertie to chuse, and the other, being his guide in the toile and travell of his sute, toke hym away when hee attended to reape the frutes of his harveste. But that whiche broughte more oyle to his matche, and kindled the coales of freshe disquiety, was that, albeit he knewe himselfe to be reciprocally loved, or at leaste nere the good wyll of his ladye, yet was he voyde of meanes and mynisters to sollicite hys cause, or bewraie that whyche hee durste not discover other thenne th'amarous regards and glaunces of the eye, wyth certeine sighes and secret wringing of the hande, and kisses gotten by stealthe in corners. Whiche albeit argued a likelihod and *simpathya* of affection, ympartinge an equalitie of desyer to the hartes of them both, yet the one being afraied to geve the charge, and the other ashamed to resigne without an alaram, seamed both plinged indifferentlye in a passion of doubt and feare, untill love (whose affaires can not well bee dispatched without th'assistance of a thirde) quarellinge with the simplicitie of Cornelio, presented him with a messenger conveniente for the conveighe of their buysines. For there was a pore swaine, sometime serving as a drudge to the mother of Cornelio, and nowe preferred to his ladye Plaudina in the rowmthe of her wagynor or coche dryver, whose office as it was alwayes to go by the doare of her coche when her pleasure was to visyt places of solace and take open ayre in the felde, so reposinge muche for himselfe in the fidelitie of his slave (thinking to enjoyne a greater credit to th'authoritie of his small office) admitted him in his hart the aptest collcarier betwene hym and his ladye. Wherefore, after he had conjured him by feare and faire promisses to advowe his diligence to th'uttermoste, wyth no lesse secrecy then wisdom, and convenient expedicion at al tymes, he made a firste proove of his pollecie and fyne conveighe of his charge, in the delyverye of a letter whiche he willed him to presente unto Plaudina; th'inward affection and disposition of whose hart, as hee measured by the messages of her eyes, so he

Secret
solicitors of
the inward
affection of
the harte.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE

V

Cornelio
writeth to
Plaudyna.

preferred his service and boarded her good wil with these tearmes:—‘ If it were not, good madam, that everye state and condicion of man were subject to his peculyar desaster, and that the noble hart (made of a delicat mettall) is more full of affections, and apte to enclyne to the loare of love, then the reste of the rude and barbarous people, I woulde thinke that the passion whiche pinchethe suche as do love, were a skourge and due correction sente from above, for a chastismente of their loftye and wanton ymagynacions. But seinge it is moste sewer that nature hath put a certaine difference betwene the dispositions of her creatures, wyth a desier to pursewe the sommonce of her instigacion accordinge to the priviledge of their degree, it is not in our power to disclaime th’instructions of such a guide, nor degenerat from th’instinct of that destenie geven us in oure conception. Wherin, as the noble mynde, loathinge the enterpryse of base or vile condicion, delites in suche conquestes as yelde moste fame or commendacion, so you oughte not to mervaile if the glymeringe beames of your rare bewtie, paynted by devine arte in the forefronte of your face, the adoracion wyche all men yelde to youre singler vertues, wyth other semely perfections and gyftes of majestie gyven you by the heavens for a dowry above the rest, have made me strike saile of my former lybertie, wyth franke resignacion of my harte and dearest parte in me to the disposicion of your mercye. Neyther have I any cause at all to mislike the sentence of my fate, or grudge wyth the lot of my present choice, yf the respecte of my unfained love and sincere loyaltye maye move you to paye the tribute of my service with an assuraunce of semblable affection. Wherein, because both daunger and distance of our abodes, denienge the tongue to do his office, barreth us also to use the benefytt of mutuall conference, I humbly crave (good madam) an absolute resolution, by our letters, of that which the secret signes and messengers of love, do not only put me in hope, but importes a warrantie of the conquest of your good wyll. Wherein, yf I maye be assisted with the goodnes of the heavens, and consent of Fortune, so farfurth as the same maye make me meritorious of your favour, and that the

The eyes be
the secret
signes and
mesengers
of love.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

meritt of my service maye bee measured with a graunte of
your good wil, there shall no peril withstande the proffer of
my lyfe to do you pleasure, nor any occasion or chaunce,
whether it be accidental or proper, have power to breake the
vowe which my harte hath alredie sworne to dye and lyve in
the service and contemplacion of youre beautie. Neyther
shall any ladye in this corner of the world have more cause
to joye in the choice of her servant then the peragon
Plaudina; whose hande I kysse with greate humilitee, and
honour the remembrance of her name with no lesse sinceritie,
being absent, then desyerous to yelde my homage with due
adoracion to the presence of so faire a creature.—Yours,
more then his owne,
CORNELYO.'

DISCOURSE

V

The ladye being darted afore with the desyer of Cornelio
(and wold gladly have entred the listes and gyven the onset,
if it had not bene for the respect of her honour) was nowe so
wounded to the quicke, that she fel into tearmes of com-
mendacion of her chaunce, blissinge the goodnes of her
fortune, that had not onely planted her affection in so highe
a place, but (yeldynge her rewarde wyth semblable glee)
hath made her the mystres of hym whom her hart had
alredye chosen and admitted into undoubted favor, whiche
she confirmed eftesones with such tearmes of gratulation and
arguments of present gladnes, that, yf the remorse of shame
and reputacion of her honor hadde not bene impedimentes
to the desyer of her harte, cloasinge her mouth againste the
present conceytes of joye in this newe societie, she had im-
mediatlye dismissed the messenger with absolute assurance
to performe the request of him that sent hym. Wherof,
albeit shame seamed to abridge the expedicion, and offer
causes of staye for the time, yet, wantynge force to mortifye
altogether the humour of ragyng desyer, she was driven to
gyve place to the provocation of love, who devestinge her
of honest shamfastnes, whiche oughte to be the chiefe habite
and decoracion of the beautie of greate ladyes, willed her to
deferre no lenger the thyng she had alredye vowed; and
seyng the injurie of present tyme denied her to satisfye
hym as she woulde, at leaste to yelde hym suche contente-

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE ment as she maye. Wherefore takynge pen, ynke, and paper,
V she replied to his letter wyth this aunswere:—

Plaudyna
aunswereth
the letter of
her servant.

‘The circumstance of your present letter (syr) seames to argue an excepcion against the frendly lookes and glaunces of mine eyes. Wherin, albeit I coulde note a greate simplicitie and want of discrecion in him that constreth the regardes of a ladye (east at unwares) to the commoditie of hymselfe, in wynninge the good will of her that meaneth nothing lesse then to make them the ministers of love, yet, beinge more ready to content you therein then curious of mine owne behaviour, I am to acquite you of imputacion that waye, and convert the note of that follie to the oversight of myselfe. And, albeit the pleasant encounter of mine eyes, seaming more liberal on your behalf, with a familiaritie more then ordinarie to al men, may persuade a certain difference I have put betwen the frendship of you and respect of any other, with desyer to embrace you above any one creature; yet was I of opinion that your sondrye vertues and reputation of honor, would not suffer you to chalenge me for the firste faulte, or to converte theis regardes of simple and colde favor into suche consequence, as to attempte the violation of that which mine honor grudgeth to lose, and the vowe of faith to my husbände forbiddes to depart withall. Notwithstanding, I yelde you no lesse thankes for your curtesye then you seame to gyve commendacion to my beautie and other gyftes you note in me, accomptinge the same of greater price, by the value and estimacion you make of them. Neither wil I refuse the proffer of your present frendship, which (as I hope) is voyde of intent to prejudice mine honor. So let it suffise you that I am not only contented to admit you into favor, but also determined to hold you no lesse deare then the tendrest part of myselfe. And because letters (beinge incident to manye casualties) are commonly the fyrst disclosers of the secretes of lovers, my advise is that hensfurth you staye not only the diligence of your pen in sealing such great importance within a dissembling pece of paper, but also be contented to commit the whole conveighe of our busines to the credit of this bringer; who is to yelde you

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

salutacion on the behalfe of her, who, joyeng no lesse in the
unitye of this frendship, then hating the thing that maie
seame hurteful to the consommacon of the same, doth wishe
your constancie of no longer continuance then you shal
fynde cause of credit in the loyaltie of your unfayned

DISCOURSE

V

‘PLAUDINA.’

The report of this letter preferred such a possibilitie and
likelihode of good lucke to the Myllanoys, that, dismissing
even now al arguments of former doubt, he determined to
accepte the offer of his fortune and pursue the benefit of
present time. Wherin he was so furthered by the diligence
of the minister and messenger of their love, that theare seamed
to want (for the fynall complate of their buysynes) but only
the consent of convenient tyme and place: which had folowed
accordingly, yf, for the more assurance of the bargaine, they
had brybed the good wyll of the blinde goddess; whom, as
the poetes have christened by the name of Dame Fortune,
gyvinge her charge over the change and alteracion of things,
so she is not so inconstant of herselfe, as readye to manifest
her mutabilitie when the wretches of the worlde seame to
reapose moste assurance in her frendship. And as the
pleasant apple, mustering with delicate glee upon the heyght
of the highest spraise, is blown down with the leaste poffe
of winde that breathes, and so oppressed wyth the violence
of the fal, that the frute is quyte taken awaye in the midst
of his glorie; so the ease and quiet of man is favored wyth
so small a moment of time, and subject to so manye chaunges,
that we oughte neyther esteme (so greatlye as we do) the
tikle pleasures of so small abode, nor judge assurance in
suche uncerteine vanities. Seing, withal, the same is of
suche malicious disposicion, that when we have laied the
fundation of oure pleasure and prosperitie, with full per-
suacion to enjoye oure quiet without controllement, it is
then that Fortune discovereth her ambushe, and invadynge
us, at unwares, wyth the furye of her malice, paieth our
former pleasure wyth an interest of treble desolacion, that
fayleth not to attende us even untill our fatall daye of
reapose. Wherof you maye note a familiar proffe in the

Fortune a
blind goddes.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE V
sequelle of this Cornelio, who, beinge upon the point to taste of the delicat frutes in love, and embrace hys ladye with suche contentement as lovers do commonly wishe and seldome encounter, beholde! the malice of the Frenchemen began to rage wyth suche extremitie againste the lynage of the Sforcians (wherof he was one of the chiefest) that he was dryven to avoyde the present daunger of hys lyfe, wyth a suddaine flight and secrete stealyng oute of the towne. Wherin he was so hoatlye pursued with th'extremitye of his perill, that beyng barred anye leasure to communicate wyth hys dearest frends, and lesse time to impart his mishap to his lady, or once salute her with a simple farewell: which seemed not so grevous to himselfe, as of treble dolour to the sorowfull Plaudina; who, distillynge no small number of teares on the behalfe of the suddain departure and absence of her deare frende, and restored at laste to a moderation and patience by force, began to cast the circumstaunce of his daunger. Wherin she ymaged all suche doubttes as eyther hope or feare coulede put in her head; somtime persuadynge he should be overtaken and oppressed by the waye, and by and by she feared leaste he were betrayed into the handes of his enemies, by the malice of such as he put in truste with his life. Wherin she was no lesse doubtfull of the one, then in dispaire of th'other, and in such perplexitie with the conceite of them both, that she seemed no lesse passioned for the time then if the enemies of her frende had cut her Cornelio in peeces afore her face. And as she wolde have dismissed theis tragicall conceites of doubte and feare, and retired to a quiet, wyth expectation of better fortune, she was sodainly assailed with a seconde alarame in her hart, which mortifyenge all care of the well doinge of her absent Cornelio, preferred a vehement desyer not onely to recover hym (wherin appeared a greate impossibilitye) but also, wishinge to bee a companyon of his jorney, and partaker of his miserye, she seemed to expose a franke offer of that whiche earste she was ashamed and made conscience to graunt. And as she was voyd of al comfort in this calamitye, savinge that the often remembrance of her frende, seemed to restore some litle contentement; so, ymagininge

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

that the breath of the ayre wolde cary the *Eccho* of her
 complaintes into the eares of hym that was gon, she saluted
 his absence with theis tearmes:—

‘All thinges ought to be hatefull to the eares which
 seame hurteful to the quiet of the mynde; and yet one chiefe
 consolation wee fynde in miserye is to recorde the circum-
 stance of our misfortune; neither can that grief be of greate
 importance, whose cause is of small moment. But alas!
 what sorow is semblable to the separacion of frendes? Ah!
 Cornelio, what auncient grudge procureth this newe mislike,
 or what offence have I don of late, that makes me meritorious
 of this greate discourtesye? Wyl thou paye the merite of my
 frendshypp wyth so unthankfull a trybute, and abuse
 th’expectacion whiche all man had of thy vertue? Haste
 thou plyed me to th’appetit of thy wyll, and nowe deter-
 mined to leave me in the greatest distresse of desyer to
 enjoye thee? Or canst thou use so small regarde to the
 desolate state of thy sorowfull Plaudina, as, leavyng her
 bathed in the teares of underserved dule, to steale awaye,
 wyth oute the comfort of one simple adieu? What nedest
 thou have doubted to communicate wyth her who hath
 alwayes reserved an equall care of thy savetye and her owne
 lyfe? And yf the love thou haste vaunted to bere me, had
 bene matched wyth an unfained meanyng of continuance
 and constancie, the feare of the enemy had not prevented
 thy comminge to me: for love alas! defyeth the malice of
 daunger, and perill is the thyng that leaste troubleth the
 harte that is trulye affectionate. What comfort in my
 present miserie, or expectation of future redresse, beinge out
 of hope eftesones to reclaime hym that receyved but nowe
 the sentence of continuall exile? How am I plunged in a
 passion of double extremetie; neyther content to disclaime
 my affection, and lesse hable to dismissee the remembrance
 of hym that is the cause of my wo! I fynde nowe (alas! to
 soone) howe justelye we women maye exclaime againste
 nature; who, framynge us of a brickle moule, apte to yelde
 and easye to be wonne, hath enjoyned us withall a certeine
 vehemencie of affection, pearsynge the harte wyth desyer, in
 suche sorte as, being once thorowlye coffed wyth love, we

DISCOURSE
 V

Plaudina
 lamenteth the
 absence of her
 frend with
 complaint
 againste her
 owne mis-
 fortune.

Love esteemeth
 no daunger.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE

v

are not onely forsaken, when we wishe chieflye to embrace the object of oure appetit, but also are subject to abyde all sortes of revenge of the ordinarye rigour of men. And what rigour or wronge have I offred the, oh! Cornelio, wherof I have not felte the firste apprehencion? For, foreyng my selfe to yelde the contentement, I spared not the proffer of myne honour to purchasse thy frendshipp, and in gyvinge the assuraunce of my good wyll, I have spotted the renowme of my former reputacion. Whereof, the bloode of shame puttes me in remembraunce wyth grudge at so greate a faulte; and thy conscience is my present witnes of my unfayned loyaltye. Neyther wyll the flatteryng lynes of thy sondrye letters conceile this discourtesye, nor the messenger and faythfull solicitour of oure love forgette to reproche the of unconstant behavvour to thy loyall Plaudina; who, feelyng now what it is to lacke the societye of hym, whome the harte hath chosen to love, is equallie pinched wyth the panges of suche as, plunged in the passion of desyer, do wishe that they wante, and lacke the thyng they chieffye woulde have; whereby they seame to norishe lyfe wyth the onely breath of a simple and colde hope. But why am I so pertiall on myne owne behalfe, in disclaimyng againste the discourtesye of hym, who peradventure deserveth not theis tearmes of blame? Or why doe I not rather respect the true cause of his departure, sturred up (as it seameth) by the necessitye of the tyme, forcinge hym to habandon his parentes, contreye and revenue, onles he wolde quenche the thirste of his enemyes wyth the abundance of his blood, and appease theyr malyce wyth the price of his heade? Certainlye the vertues and gyftes of Cornelio acquite hym of all argumentes of inconstancie: neyther can a bodye of so rare perfection harbor suche dyssemblynge disposicion. But as the desyerous harte is seldome at rest, so the doubtfull mynde is dreadefull of deceite, and, quarelllyng continuallye with his good hap or synister fortune, is alwayes in ymaginacion what judgement to resolve uppon the condition of his owne estate. So my case is of no lesse perplexitie; for, wafting indifferently betwene happie chaunce, and evil successe, I fele myselfe double passioned, somtime moved to rejoice my good hap,

The desyerous harte is seldom at rest, and doubtfull mindes dreede always deceite.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

V

in being loved of so honest, curteous, and noble, a gentleman as Cornelio, and by and by dryven to inveighe againste my evill fortune, that hath put suche distance and seperacion of oure bodies when we weare at point to performe the consummacion of our acquaintaunce. And, albeit the common chaunces of this worlde resemble a confection made of hony and gall, and that the banquettes of love beinge garnished with dishes of both sortes, will us to make choice wyth deliberacion—alleggyng that the pleasure is not so great, as the repentaunce and penaunce of harde digestion—yet I thinke the vertue to performe the vowe of the harte takes awaye the greatnes and haynous disposicion of the faulte. Wherefore seinge my hart hath made his choice, and the reste of my partes resolved to performe the quest, I wyll not onelye dismisse all doubttes of the assurance of his good wyll, but studye to excede hym in affection; devisinge the meanes from hensfurth, to make hym feele the force of my goodwill, with the desyer I have to knitt an indissoluble unitye of the ij mindes, whose bodies are forced to lyve in seperation by the malice of the worlde, and angrie dome of my fortune.'

Here, yf Plaudina inveighed onely upon ij pointes of her desaster, the one for the suddaine departure of her frende, and the other for the doubte she seamed to put in the assuraunce of his love, it is to bee thoughte that Cornelio had cause of treble complaint, both to be driven to save his lyfe by cowardlye flighte, to steale awaye in suche secret and scilent maner, as only his guide was pryvie to his goinge, and also to bee distressed with such shortnes of time, that he was barred to seame thankeful to his ladye with a simple farewell, whiche was sufficient to sturre up her jelous humour againste hym. But that whiche exceeded the rest in greatnes of greef was that he had no man of trust to carye her newes of his being, and muche lesse durste he communicat his buysynes wyth any straunger. Neyther had he hope to be advertised of the accurrantes of Myllan, nor meane to make reoport of his owne estate at Mantua; for that he durst not discover the place of his present abode there. Wherefore cryeng out of the constellation and clymat of his destynies, he complained of his unhappie case in this sorte:—

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE

V

The complaint of
Cornelyo
beinge in
exile.

‘Yf my offence were as greate, as my punyshmente is grevous, I wolde thinke no submission worthie of my place, nor my falte meete to be dispensed withall; or if I had as justlye deserved this wronge, as I am sewer to suffer the smarte, I had no reason to commence cause of complaint agaynste the malice of the world, and muche lesse accuse the iniquitye of present tyme; nor yet crye out of the synister disposition of Fortune, to whom as the poetes seame to attribute some power over our worldly affaires (bestowing their indevor therin I thinke) rather to feede the time and ymagynacions of the people with a shape or figure of an unconstante creature, then wyth intente to perswade a credit in so seneeles an ymage. So I am also perswaded by the present experience of her inconstancie, that she is not so liberall to geve as readye to take awaye, and lesse hable to contynue the felicitie wherwyth she seames to flatter the conceite of the simple. For whom she hath brought to beleve in her, she makes many times more desirous of glory, then hable to receive it. Wherin who maye more justlye exclaime agaynste her mobylitie then the unhappie Cornelio; whom (being favored with the offer of a reciprocal affection, and at the pointe to be put in the possession of his desyer) shee hath not only taken the praie out of my mouthe, but comitted me wyth cruelty, into the vale of extreme desolacion? Of what moment are the greatness of princes, or to what end serves honor or highe callinge, seinge bothe the one and the other are subject to confucion, and readye to yelde at the leaste poffe of winde that bloweth from a contrary shoare? Yet if I were a simple cytizen or companion of meaner callinge, th’ennemie wolde neyther watche my doings wyth so manye eyes, nor pursewe my death by publike or pryvate invacion, and I suffered to live as free from the troubles and tumultes of the worlde, as farre from any care or accompte of the doings of great men; where nowe alas! th’only heighte of my estate, tipped wyth the tytyle of honor, depryveth me of th’use of my contrey, societie of my frendes, and contemplacion of the thinge I holde no lesse deare thenne the healtthe of my soule. But if any thinge colde stoppe the covetous humour of man, and everye

His mistres.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

one (contente wyth the lot of his porcion) would cease to invade the dominion of an other, kinges shoulde sytt sewer in their troanes, and the pallais of princes voide of suspicious feare and care. And then (myne owne Plaudina) shoulde not I live wythout the companie of the, and thou have cause to doubt the firme constancie of thy servant; whose reputacion of honor and faythe towardes his prince, denieth hym for the presente, to honor the wyth the dutye which thy vertues deserve. And, albeit it is no lesse follye then tyme loste to travel in dispite of Love and Fortune, whyche bothe have conspired my destruction, and joyned in consente to kepe mee frome enjoyenge the favor of her who merites the service of one more noble and worthie every way then I; and because no distance shal dissolve my affection, nor dymynishe the leaste braunche of good will, nor yet time herselfe have power to overtreade the vertue of my faythe—I will so dispose of the reste of my life, as the same shall make absolute declaracion of the unfained constancie of my mynd, wyth the sincere vowe of loyaltie, whiche I have sworne and dedicated to the service of her devine bewtie, even untill the laste and extreme seperacion of my soule and bodie. Wherin, because adversatie is rather subject to many miseries then apte to admit any consolation, and that the goodwill of fortune comes rather at unwares then won by speciall sute, I wyl, perforce, contente myselve wyth the gyfte of presente time, and, usinge the remembrance of my mistres as a speciall moderation of the hardnes of my exile, so honor th'ymage and picture of her bewtie, painted alreadie in th'intralls of my harte, that th'only remembrance and inward viewe of my deare Plaudina shall norishe the remainder of my miserable daies, wyth no lesse contentment being absent then I toke pleasure in the regarde of her glistring eyes, and the rest of her delicat proporcion, at such time as my good fortune was content to geve me the glee of her presence.' Wherein, albeit hee spent certeine time, wyth ymagynacion that his ladye harde the crye of his complaintes, and gave judgements of his syde, for th'assurance of his loyaltie, yet he forgat not to hawnte the companies of the dames of Mantua, refusinge to resemble in

DISCOURSE

V

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE

V

The order of
a desolate
lover.

The desier of
a desperat
lover.

any wise the order of those shaded lovers, who, brought up in the skooles of one Romanto Tristano, or leadinge th'errauante and obscure lyfe of Amydes, do fill the ayre full of their dollorous sighes, and sekyng to recorde their passions in the depe and hidden caves of the earthe, delyte not in the place and good felowshippe of good hawnte; neyther are they at any time so well in quiet, as when they feele their desolate bodies shrowded under the shade of solitarye places, or when, by longe ranginge the wildernes and deserte landes, they fynde by chaunce some odd hermitage, farr from the use and ordynary habitacion of men, where fedynge only upon the hoalsomnes of the ayre, and ymagynacion of their owne conceite, they pyne awaye in expectation that some good aungell or oracle wyll appeare unto them wyth the message of good newes, or els the fatall sentence of their lyfe. As those kynde of turtles or domesticall fooles, degeneratinge from the planet that governeth th'inclynacion of true lovers (whose complexion ought not to be dymmed wyth the darkenes of desolate places) do seame to have their consepcion from under the angrye and crabbed constellacion of Saturne, wishinge willinglie that their ladies were converted into the shape of *Nymphes*, whom the poetes faine to wander and dwell in the thickest covert of the woddes, to th'ende that none but they shoulde enjoye the glaunce and viewe of their bewtie; so the true and loyal lover (armed wythe unfayned asuraunce of his vowè) doubts not to advance himselfe in the presse of moste repaires, thinkinge he can geve no greater prooffe or declaracion of hys constancie to his mistres then to withstande th'ymportunities and alarms of other. Which you may note in this Cornelio, who, visiting the assemblies and metings of the ladies of Mantua, was marked ymediatly of one of the chiefest ladies of the citie, and regarded wyth so good an eye that fallinge extremely in love wyth the vertues and other dexterities of the banished knight, she embraced hym so straitelye in the intrals of her harte, that, uppon th'instante, she had forgot the honor and reputacion of her state, wyth the vaile of shame (which ought to seele the eyes of great ladies and correcte the humor of their

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

fonde appetit) in executing th' office of a shamefull clyent, in a cause whiche she neyther ought to have solicited, and muche lesse condiscended unto, by force of any ympportunities howe great soever they were, if it had not bene for th' assistance of an olde neighbour of hers; who, understandinge the disease of her mistrys, promissed her diligence to procure the remedye with expedition. Wherein she omitted no oportunitye as occasion was geven: for, attendinge the offer of convenient time, she founde the meanes to encounter Cornelio one morninge all alone in a churche, at whom she roaved in this sorte:—

‘The condition of nobilitye consistes not so muche in the title and surname of honor, as in the commendacion and effecte of true vertues appearinge in a grafte discended of so noble a stocke. And the greatest thinge (syr) that makes a valyante man knowen to the worlde, and preserveth the renowne of his reputacion in entyer, is not to refuse th' occasion and offer of his fortune, geven him for th' increase of his felicitie. Neyther can any man more abuse th' excellent gifts and goodnes of nature, then to contemne th' instinct and pryviledge whiche she hathe geven him for the decoration of his estate.’ The gentleman, somewhat astonied wyth the soddayne encounter of his neighbour, seamed to marveile no lesse at the retorike of th' olde Marmotta, then muse what myghte be th' intent of such formal protestacion. Wherwyth, for his parte, havinge no great leasure to devise for his aunswere, cold not replie but wyth tearmes of curtesye in this sorte:—‘Yf at unwares my tonge hath stolen a libertie, in talkynge the thyng that hathe offended the eares of you or any other, or by like oversighte have don that whyche your disposition can not brooke nor the law of curtesye allowe, wyth the consente of your opinyon, I am rather to be pardoned by course then punished by justice. For that suche offences, beinge common and naturall, seame rather to procede of ignorance then of th' instigacion of malice, or corrupcion of the mynde. Wherin as your judgements is no lesse equall then my innocenye meritorious, so, if it wyll please you to reveale the chiefe pointes of my falte, you shal see the hardenes of the penaunce, with treble

DISCOURSE

V

The firste metinge of the baude with Cornelio.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE satisfaction of the wronge, shall take awaye the foulnes of
V the fact.' Which kinds of curteys replie liked not a litle
the cares of the messenger; who, accomptinge him worthie
to enjoye the good will of the greatest ladie of a contrey,
gave judgement of the victorie wyth ende of th'enterpryce.
Wherin, notwithstandinge, she was no lesse deceived, then
shame, with the respect of her callinge, oughte to have
cloased her mouthe from solycitinge so badd a case. For,
albeit she discovered point by poynte the cause of her
cominge, with a peculyar commendacion and praise of the
ladie that sent her (forgettinge not to decypher artyfyciallie
her sondrye properties and many giftes of nature, but
chieflye her unfained affection, with readie offer and con-
formetic of that whereof lawe of kinde makes all men not
only desierous, but studie to wyn by longe sute and service-
able diligence) yet wantinge force to shake the walls of so
sewer a fortresse, her arte seamed also insufficient to per-
swade the mynde of Cornelio; who, albeit was of opynion
and knew well enough, that the wisdom was no lesse in
acceptinge th'offer of a good adventure then the follie of
doble moment to refuse the preferment of fortune, yet was
he so whollie resolved in the loyall love of his ladye at
Millan, whose only and simple remembrance restored suche
a remorse of the vowe whiche his harte had alre dye sworne
on her behalfe, that he seamed more willinge to embrace
the last and fatal dome of his lyfe then desyerous to abuse
the least point of his dutie and service unto her. And,
albeit the desyers wee feele sturre in us, ymporte no other
thinge then a certeine mirror, or lokinge glasse, receivinge
the darke ympressions whych our appetites present unto us;
and that they whiche ymagyn whole castells of constancie,
with protestacion never to fainte in the vowe they have
made, do no other thinge thenne give occasion to writars to
bewtyfye their histories with the circumstaunce of their
follie, with suche a blowe and open mockerye in the ende,
that they sticke not to describe their vaine and fonde
humor uppon publike stage in the hearinge of all the
worlde—yet am I of opynion, that as the garmente that is
fyt for every man is well framed for no man, so the harte

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

that is as apte to declayne as the appetit is readie to sommon, is neyther meritorious of favor in any sort, nor meete to kepe place in the rancke of the vertues—chieflye where hee refuseth th'objecte of his owne choice. Neyther is it possible that two sonnes geve lighte to the worlde at one instante, nor once conveniente for the mynde of one man to embrace th'ymage or figure of more then one saint. Wherein th'exemple of Cornelio, callinge us to th'ymytations of the like vertue, serves also to confute th'oppositions of certeine covetous ladies nowe adaies; who, rather gredie of glorie thenne hable to deserve it, do not sticke to whet their wittes and inveighe synisterly againste th'inconstancie of men, transporting the whole title and honor of true loyaltie to themselves, as though there remained no sparke nor showe of that vertue in the hartes of men; who, as they were the firste partakers of that gifte, so the constante order of their doinges and lyves (being founde for the moste parte the longest in breath) do argue them no lesse worthie of that perfection, then hable to excede that flatteringe crew of flickeringe creatures; who, in robbinge us of that which we deserve by juste title, doe seame to bewtifye themselves wyth the merite of other mens vertues. But, because the eares of al women can not brooke the hearinge of a troth, and that the pursewte of this quarrell (arguinge a more daunger in th'adventure, then gaine in the victorye) mighte set abroache the faltes of some of our contreywomen, I am contente to geve them that they will have by force, and retiringe to the place of my historie, declare unto you the aunswer of Cornelio to the messenger: —'I am sorye' (saieth he) 'the large honor and liberall offer whyche you seame to presente unto me on the behalfe of your lady and mystrys is of a more highe momente thenne eyther I am worthie to possess, or hable to requite wyth equall merite. Wherein, because the harde condition of my presente state seames my chieftest enemye to soo greate a prefermente, I doubtte howe to seame thankefull to her and satisfye the tyme both together. Albeit as thinges ympossible are not to bee pursewed, and offences forced of necessitie are moste meritorious of pardon, so, beyng not hable

DISCOURSE

V

Men more constant then women.

Cornelyo aunswerethe the baude.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE to answer her expectacion in counterchaunge of affection,
V I am onely to racke the litle talente that is lefte me to so
highe a pyn, that only she shall dispose of my honor and
lyfe, wyth all that I have in the worlde, at her pleasure;
whyche it maye like her to use as a supplie of the present
dutie and service she demaundes at my hande. Onely beinge
at this presente not the maister of myselfe, nor the use of
my harte in mine owne possession, my sute is that shee
rather blame the wronge whiche time offreth to us bothe,
then note me of any disdayne in refusinge the frendshippe
of her who merites more then I am hable to performe.
For if my harte were as free from forreine and former
bondes as shee deserveth to be served, and that my affec-
tions did not exceede th'ordenary ympressions whiche assaile
the mynde of man, assure youre selfe shee shoulde not lyve
longe unsatsyfied to her contentment, and muche lesse have
cause to enter into suspicion of jelicous disdain in me for
retorning the offer of that which maye serve for a present
to the greatest prince in Italy. Neyther will I so much
abuse the proffer of her acquaintanee or cause of your
comminge, as cyther her liberal offer, or vehemencie of
your importunities on her behalf, shal move me to resolve
a worse opynion, or more slender credyt, on the honour or
honestie of her that sente you; desyeringe you for end to
preferr my excuse accordinge to th'integretie of the same,
with this further addicion and humble requeste, that she
bee as holde to employe me in any other respecte, no lesse
amplye, and so far furthe as my honor and lyfe will ex-
tende.' 'More honestlie' (saiethe the messenger) 'colde you
not refuse the offer of that whyche earste was never pre-
sented to any, and muche lesse so neare the poynte to make
a price of so precious a marchandise. Neyther do I thinke
you worthe of the title of that courtesye whereof you are
commended, nor yet an I of mynde that youre harte is
capable of the noble vertue of love; seynge the renowne
and honor of her, whose bewty only hath the greatest
princes of Italye in awe, canne make no breache nor enter.
And who woulde seame of so slender judgements (onlesse
hee hadde quite disclaimed the order of reason) that, beinge

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

proffered frelie that whiche princes can not get by any sute, and not onely desyered, but pursewed wyth greate instance, wolde let slippe the gyft of so good a fortune, and make chippes of the frendshippe of so faire and curteous a ladye? Wyth what face dare you visyt hereafter th'assemblies of greate dames, havinge committed so greate a falte on the behalfe of her whose goodwill you do not deserve, if her curtesye did not call you to that preferment? Are you of opynion that the merite of your bewtie and other porcion excedes the honore and heighte of her that woeth you? Ymagyn the same to bee of suche force, that it is hable to drawe ladyes to doate of you even unto deathe, woulde you become so harde-harted as to encrease your glorye, wyth th'exployt of so great crueltie? If you bee subjecte to soo fonde a humor, you mustes nedes bee incydente to the juste revenge which the god of love is readie to thonder upon such as seame to holde his loare in skornful contempte. Whereof as I have harde mo examples then my skill is hable to reveile in good order, being never trained in the torning over of volumes and histories; so I wishe chieffie the plage of Narcissus maye put you in remembrance of your present oversighte, leaste in disdaininge the frendshippe of such as excell yourselfe every way, you doate uppon th'ymage of your owne shadowe, and by that meanes yelde treble usurye to the wronge you offer her whose loyall affection deserveth a better rewarde then the retorne of a repulse of so small ymportance.' Wherwith, Cornelio, cuttinge of the reste of her waspish discourse, desyered her to presse him wyth no greater ymputacion, then his offence deserved. 'For' (saieth he) 'in fearminge me unworthie of the title of curtesye, and that my hart is to harde to admit the impression of love, you rather slaunder me by ignorance then accuse me by justice; seinge the only force of love hath forced alreadie a vowe of my affection and harte to a ladie of Millan, whose presence albeit the iniquitie of fate hath taken from me for a time, yet shall the only remembrance and inwarde regarde of her bewtie and vertue, suffice to minister sufficient moderacion and chiefe comfort during the angry dome of my hard exile. Neyther shal the force

DISCOURSE

V

Narcissus
doateth upon
his owne
shadowe.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE of any enchantment, and much lesse the charme of any
V intysing perswacion, prevaile so far over mee as once to
make mee transgresse the leaste point of my confirmed
loyaltie. Wherin, as the salemandre lyves in the flame, so
wyll I pyne away and consume by peecemeale in the passion
of true love, til the angrye fates, ceassinge to wreake their
malice upon me, do place me in the possession of the due
meede of my merite.'

Here this olde enchauntresse (understandinge the circum-
stance and full of his disease, and that his harte was so
thorowlie lymed with the bewtie of his ladie at Millan that
it denied th'impression of her offer—wherein albeit there
appered an ympossibilitie to wythdrawe, or at leaste to
procure moderacion to the vehemencie of his affection—
yet, beinge no lesse loath to take a foyle in her enter-
prise then desyerous to performe her charg to th' uttermost,
wyth intent to retorne the messenger of absolute contente-
ment or undowted dispair) thoughte not to leave hym till
shee hadde syfted and tryed every synowe and vaine of his
disposicion. And havinge but one pece of retoricke re-
mayninge, she booked it out, under a covertely kinde of
reprehending his folie, in this sorte:—'Are you one of that
vaine crue' (saithe she) 'and archfooles of the worlde, that,
striving to bende the bow of loyal lovers, do make a glorie
of a thing as requisite in love, as cowardnes or wante of
courage in the soldiour mainteining skirmish against the
emie? Do not you thinke that a woman of indifferent
judgement will not rather laughe at such folye in her
servant then allowe his fonde constancie, begon without
reason, and kepte with so small discrecion? And, albeit
it is glorye of a ladye to be onely embraced and dearly
beloved, and that they have (as it were by a speciall instinct
of nature) a desyer above all creatures to be the only
possessours of the hartes of their lovers, do you not thinke,
for all that, that they give not leave and libertye to theyr
servantes to make a seconde choyce or change of mistres,
to th'ende they maye be thorowly resolved of the loyaltie
of their servante, and he discern the true difference betwene
the affections of bothe his ladies? And sewer that hart

Constancie.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

is wroughte of strange mettall, and the sprite of slender capacitie, that, beinge bounde (as it were) to a taske, is subiecte only to one simple desyer, without power to bestow his regards in more places then one. Admit constancie to be as greate a vertue as you make it, and that the faith in love is to be kepte withoute violacion, I praye you, in asking you one question by frendshipp, let me be aunswered by the veray touch and reaport of your conscience.—What assurance have you of equalitve or semblable affection at the handes of your mistrys of Myllan, whom you have more reason to doubtte then cause to beleve? Do you thinke that you are only beloved, or that beinge punished by exile, without greate hope eftesones to recover you, she can continue as faythfull for her parte, as you seame foolishe in beinge the slave and subject of an ymage or shadowe of a thyng so farre hence? No! no! do awaye theis toys of small substance, and let my experience, Seigneur Cornelyo, prescribe you one chief and generall rule, that no woman beinge once disposed to love, and havinge the object of her fancie taken cut of her presence, is so hable to repress the humour of desyer, or correct th'instigation of her appetit, as it is eyther in her power to disclaime at her pleasure, or degenerat from that wherin she hath a facilitie by nature; but as one spoiled of all resistance and arguments of vertue, she ceaseth not to followe the queste of her licencious inclinacion, till she have founde freshe supplie to enter the lystes, and paye th'arrerages of hym that first conquered the place. Women be neither equall wyth saintes nor like unto angels, neyther are they made of other mettall then suche as is distilled of th'imperfections of yourselves; and, in place of priviledge or free dispence from the passions of love, I affirme them to excede all other creatures in the vehemencye of that impression, and chieffye where the effect doth not followe th'assurance of the worde. For as the drawinge glaunces of the eye, and pleasaunt platt of the tongue, is rather an earnest penny of the bargaine then a ful consummacion of th'aggrement, so the hungrye appetit of the hart affected is never satisfied to his contentement, till he have tasted of the delicate frute growynge in the

DISCOURSE

V

Women derived of the imperfections of men.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE
V
Faith to be observed where the desyer is performed.

middest of th' orcharde and paradise of love; whiche onely concludes and knyttes up the reste of th'imperfect bargain. Wherin as I must confesse unto you, that both the lawe of loyaltye is to be observed, and faith kepte invyolable, where we fynde an unities of affection and full effect of our desyer; so to bestowe love in the ayre, and lye without hope of the thing that is wished, I accompte it rather the part of a madman then office of one that hath his wittes at commandment. Nether doth the ende of suche pynnyng conceites importe other consequence, then a loathsom wearines and unnatural hate of lyf, with continuall expectation to dye, and an everlasting remembrance of hys follye after hys death. And for your parte, comparynge the symptomes of your present passion with th'unlikelihod I see to have spedie ende of youre martirdom, you bringe in remembrance the miserable state of the simple sparowhake; who, being hooded to take away her wildnes, syttes all the day longe beckinge upon her Jesses and whettinge her beake uppon the pearche, rather in dispaire then certein of the comming of her keeper. Let me pearce that harde harte of yours with perswacions of reason, and seame not so rashe in refusinge the goodnes of Fortune—who albeit is accompted an enemy to moste menne, yet is she also frendlie to some—and ymagyn that once in the course of your lyfe she kisseth your cheke, and holdeth her lappe open with an offer of a good torne, whiche, if you refuse, is not to be reclaimed eftesones by any arte or pollecie. Convert your affection founded upon such slipper substaunce, and no lesse incertaine of his due mede, into a ballance of equall frendshippe and harte of semblable honor and vertue; and exchange at last these languishing conceites that tormente your pynnyng sprite for a pleasure no lesse precious then of great merite, who is no lesse readie then willing, and more apte to offer then you hable to receive. Cease, hensfoorth, to love uppon credyt, and crye out of the shadowe or figure of a thinge that hathe neyther cares to heare your complainte nor meanes to releve your distresse; and thinke that the glorye of love consistes not in the simple desyer of the mynde, nor in the foolish provacacions of our vaine conceites, but, pass-

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

ing further, the pleasante rewarde and tryumphe of that victorye, consisteth in the consummacion of the worke; wythout the whiche, love seameth no other thinge then a bare platt or table, wherupon the painter maye drawe what proporcion hee lyst! And truely as there is no manne happie in love, nor hathe cause to vaunte of the victorye, but hee that encountreth the th'objecte of hys desyer; soo mee thinketh a manne shoulde not love that hee hathe not, nor desyer the thyng that is utterlye unknowen unto hym. I saye thus muche, syr, because youre resolute affection towardes youre ladye of Myllan seameth rather to argue ann humour of frenzye then vertue in love, and vaine opinion then true effect; advisinge you for ende to have a care of yourselfe and speciall regarde to this laste request of myne, that is, in leavyng the shryne to honor the saint, and to cloase your mouthe from gaping after that you can not get, as the unquiet dogge in the night that barketh at the shadowe of the moone.'

The oration of this bawde seamed suche musicke to the eares and mynde of Cornelio, that he rather wished a continuance of her jargon then an abridgement of her tale; but seyng she gave ende to her discourse, with expectation to heare hys replie, he dysmissed her with this shorte aunswere:—'Albeit your present repeticion of th'abuse in love (seaminge in some respect to bee assisted bothe with rayson and justice) dothe discover diverse faltes in sondrye women (wherof, as you say, the most part deliteteth as much to ronne ryot and seeke a chaunge of pasture, as the other takes pleasure in the vertue of true constancie), yet oughte wee to use suche an integretie betwene the good and evill that the faltes of the wicked do not deface the renowme of them that deserve but well. And, as you saye, it is harde for a manne to love that he hathe not, so I note no lesse rashnes in you to give judgement of the thinge you knowe not but by examinacion. For I am fullie perswaded, that no distance of places, nor adversitie of times, have power to dyminishe, and much lesse dissolve, th'affection of her, whose presence I hope hereafter to enjoye with no lesse pleasure, then her absence seames now to gyve me cause

DISCOURSE

V

Cornelio
giveth his
lasteaunswere
to the baude.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE of annoye. And, albeyt I have not yet tasted of the frute
V whiche all lovers do wyshe, and fewe happen to fynde, yet dare I accompte my selfe as depelye in the favor of my absent mistrys as the best of that happye companie. And suche weakelinges as accompte no vertue in love but in th'encounter of their lascivius desyer, and can not rest satisfied except they crop the hearbe of pleasure, are alwayes founde more liberall in wordes then constant in love, and more hoat in the begynnyng then hable to continue to the end. Neyther do I see any experience to the contrary, but that the passion whiche I suffer ought rather too beare the true title of love then the surname of a simple desier, seynge the delite I take in the remembrance of her beautie is no lesse pleasure unto me then if I had alredye performed and tasted of the delicat effect of love; which I am determined to attende, tyl eyther the goodnes of a better fortune restore me to my desert, or the force of death give end to my desolacion; willing you herewith to correct your judgement, and cesse to inveyghe againste her, whose constancie and vertue only defaceth the usurped comendacion of the most of your corrupte sect. For the rest, the justice of my cause (I hope) wil make my excuse tollerable in the opinion of her that sent you; and for your paines I can but yelde you the choise of a thousande thanks.' Wherewith, mother retreician tooke her leave and retired, with lesse contentement in her bad successe then assured hope to prevaile in the beginning, towards her Mantuan lady; to whom recounting eftsones the particularities of her discourse with Cornelio, she concluded that he, beyng lined with another bushe, had no power to make a graunt of his good wil without a special pasport from Millan; 'where' (saith she) 'he hath lefte both body and hart, and appereth here but in the likenes and shape of a figure without sence or feelyng, and lesse hable to admitt the preferment of honor or proffer of reason.' Which albeit seamed greatly to grudge the conscience of the lady, chiefly for that she was intercepted of that which she accompted no lesse sewer then the articles of her crede or to be beleved, yet, waighing the reasons of his excuse with the raging oversight of herselfe in indifferent

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

ballance, she made of necessitie a vertue and retired to a
paciencie parforce, forgetting not to punish her falte with the
pennance of repentance, and comend to the skies the incom-
perable loialty of Cornelio, with no lesse gratulation on the
behalf of her that had choice of so constant a servant—
who, for her part, also, at this while, was in no lesse care of
his wel doying then busily occupied in devise how to recover
his presence and requite the passion of his painful torment,
which he chiefly desyred and justely deserved. Wherein
as she for her part wyshed no lesse to embrace hym then
he meritorius to possess her; so, albeit there passed cer-
taine letters betwene them, seaminge rather to doble the
desier of them both then yeld moderation to the passion
of eyther of them, yet she founde the meanes to coaste
the malice of her fortune with a contrarye sleyghte, by pro-
curyng to her husbände a jorneye of xx or xxx dayes traueil.
Whereupon, she dismissed imediatly a corrior to Cornelio
with the reoport of the newes in this letter folowing:—

DISCOURSE
V

Plaudyna.

‘Albeit (sir) Calamitie of her owne nature is so quarelous
that she ceaseth not to assaile th’afflicted with continual
sommonce of perentorye dispaire, yet oughte we not re-
appose so slender an assurance in the assystance of vertue
as eyther to make a marchandise of the goodnes of our for-
tune, and much lesse sell the hope of future filicitie, nor
yet utterlie despaire of the benefyt of time; who, as she is
thankful enoughe to suche as suffer her with paciencie, so
hathe she presentlye entred into suche compassion of our
mutuall distresse, that, somonyng my husbände with a
jorney of a monethes travel in forreine affaires, she hath
opened us a most sewer meane to meete and rejoyce together
without daunger. Wherein, as all suche seldome proffers of
frendshypp ought to be no lesse welcome when they come
then they seame of tickle aboade when we have them; so, if
you wishe to be resolved of that which you doute, and have
no lesse care of your owne contentement, my advise is you
embrace the benefyt of so convenient a time; persuadyng
yourselfe that if you were here, I wold communicate with
you more liberally then I dare discourse by letter; and

Plaudyna
advertiseth
her lover of
the departure
of her hus-
band.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE onelye yourselfe is of creditte to serve as a secretorye in
V affaires of such secret importance. Whereof you maye
conster the meaninge without great studie. Only ymagyn
that Fortune is not suche a nigarde of her frendship as
spitefull yf her offer be refuced, and Time so disdaineful
that she will not tarye a moment above her stynte.—Yours
without change,
PLAUDINA.'

Yf thies newes were welcome to Cornelio, I leave yt to the
judgement of that amarus crewe, who seame so resolute and
simple in their love that their lyfe is onely prolonged by a
desyred daye but when they see an approche of their liberty,
with licence to quenche their hungry myndes with the fode
they chieflye wishe to feede uppon. God knoweth the small
regarde they have to honor, and lesse respect to the dutie
of their conscience; and with what slender advise and lesse
time, they make the poore husbnde a rampier of hornes to
defend his forehead from the shott of th'emie! Wherin,
sewer, their delite is not so great, and glorie of so foule
a conquest of suche comendacion, as she worthie of treble
tormentes, who, for the glott of her fylthie desyer, and
satisfyenge their founde ymportunities, dothe make no con-
science to defile the mariage bedd of her husbnde, take
awaye the renoune of her former estimacion, deface the
glorie of her auncestors, and leave besides a title of villan-
ous reproche uppon her children and posteritie; of whose
reputacion shee oughte to bee more carefull then mynde-
full to satisfie the gredye appetit of her owne pleasure, or
folyshe pursuete of their filthie love. And from this foun-
taine of execrable abuse distilleth also the sondrie sortes of
unnaturall divisions happening at this daye betwen noble
houses and men of meaner discentes; the children detest-
ynge the father, and the father abhorringe them whome he
thynkes to bee none of his, and one brother persecutinge an
other with no lesse mortality of hate then if they were
common enemies of forreine contreys. For the bed being
once stained, the blod mixed, and the law of mariage
abused, yt muste nedes follow that the frute procedynge
of suche seedes can neyther degenerate nor bee without

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

V

corruption. Neyther can the son yelde honor or dutie to him whom nature denieth to bee his father. Wherein, albeit I have somewhat exceded the compasse of my commission, yet I am so persuaded of th'indifferencie of those fewe ladyes whiche fele theimselfes toched with this shorte dygession, that they will not grudge with this parable of their falte; seyng truthe marcheth under oure enseygne, readye to advoche and witnes the circunstance of my allegations. Which, like as I inferred, rather to advise you to eschew the lyke evil then for any derogacion of your honor, so yt maye like you al to excuse my reasons by th'integrety of the cause, and pardon me by justice; retiringe now with semblable pacience to the sequelle of our Cornelio, who, construinge the wordes of the letter accordyng to the meaning of the writer, ymagined by and by th'importance of th'affaires she had too communicate with hym. Wherein, albeit love moved hym on the one side to performe the desier of hys ladye, yet Reason on the other part required hym to be careful of his owne savetie, and not to buy a taste of his slypper pleasure with the price of his lyfe. 'For' (saith shee) 'if you go to Myllan, and be discovered by anye of the Frenche race, or frendes of theyr faction, your daunger wilbe to great to escape, and you shal come to too late a repentance of your follie.' Wherefore, ballancinge indifferently betwene doute and feare, with desier to use this occasion, leaste he myghte seame unthankfull to the good-will and requeste of his mistres, he imparted the whole circunstance to one Delio, a deare frende of hys, of whom (beyng pryvye from the begynnynge to his amarus practise) he demaunded earnestly a speciall assistence of good counsell, touchynge th'absolution of his present doute. Thys Delio, havinge trodden alredy the whole laborinth of love, and knewe by experience what an elne of suche follies was worthe, gave as ryghte a judgement of the disease of hys frende, as yf he had felte the moyngne of his polses, or tried the disposition of his water againste the son in an uryvall. Wherein he failed not to discharge th'office of a true frende in assaynge to remove th'occasion and mortefye the yll, with thies perswations:—

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE

V

Delyo persuadeth Cornelio not to go to Millan.

'Like as,' sayth he, 'small soares require slender medecins, and great greves are wont to try th' utter moste of the arte of phizicke; and that the wise and experienced phizision, afore he undertake to cure the disease of hys patient, or give certaine judgement of his recoverye, doth not only examine th' occasion of his greif, but makes also his firste indeavour to take awaye and mortifye the cause, afore he disclose the skil and hidden misteries of his arte; so the maladie of love, being nothing inferior to the ragyng oppression of the burnyng fever (who desyereth alwayes thinges that be hurtefulle, and escheweth the necessarie preservatives of health) is neyther to bee cured, nor delte withall in anye sorte, unlesse the pacient wil suffer the circumstance of his disease to be syfted to th' uttermost, and abide an incysion of the soare even to the quicke; to th' ende that by th' operation of the *Cataplame* whiche shalbe ministred to you, you dispayre not of recoverye (althoughe there appeare diverse lykelihoodes of daunger) nor I broughte to answer for my frendshipp, whiche I proteste to be without spot of dishonest intent. And as it is no lesse necessarie for hym that is sicke to repose a speciall credit in his phisicion then the minister of medecins to bee of exquisite skylle (for that the opinion and conceite of his connyng, importes a greate consolation to the mynde of hym that is sicke) so you muste neyther denie the vertue of my medecine to worke his force, nor doubte of any thing I meane to tell you; for the tale can worke small effecte where the reaporter is of slender credit. Therefore, afore I sifte you any further, I requeste you onely of one thing, as moste chief and necessarye to prevent the present peril whiche attendes you: I meane that, in chaungynge your affection, you wyll also dismisse and breake the resolution wyche I knowe your harte hath alredye determined. The disposicion and exterior apparence of youre countenance, argue a wonderfull devocion you have to visite your oracle and saint at Millan; whiche also I coulde well admitte, if I sawe not in the ende of that vayne pilgrymage, a harde pennance accompanied with more perils then ever happened to the son of Anchises, undertakynge to visitt th' infernall valleyes by the guide of his Sybilla. You

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

V

knowe well enough your banyshment from Myllan proceded of rebellion; and that your offence is so haynous in the conceite of the majestie theare, that onelye the price of your heade can make the attonement and quenche the rage of his wrath. And, seinge the sleighte of your enemies and malice of fortune have dogged you and your doinges so nearely since your comming to Mantua, that you have not spoken or don a thinge of suche counsell but Fame hath discovered your intent and made your adversaries partakers of your meaning, it behoveth you to thinke that of late she is not become so wel affected towards you, as she can or will conceile this last and most perillous resolution. Besides, in what sorte could you disguise your selfe that your sondrie secret markes wold not bewraye you, or what waye have you to passe where you are out of knowledge of al men? And admit your owne sleighte and pollecie were hable to prevayle above the malice of your fortune, in defending you from the daunger of the waye and diverse ambushes of your enemyes, are you so persuaded of th' assurance of your Plaudina, that you wil commit your life and losse of honor to the fained faith of a deceitefull woman, and that without a proffe of her constancie? Yf the miste of fonde affection doth so much dim your eyes, and gifte of present understandinge that you are not hable to discover the legerdemaines of lighte women, let my experience warne you to beware of the subtill sleightes and fyne allurementes of so venomous a serpente. What can you tell whether this traine she hath made be a stale to betraye you, and committ you to the mercye of your enemye? Or peradventure she hath sente for you, because she seeth an impossibilitie in th' enterprice, and rather to brynge you in daunger then of intent to yelde satisfaction to your desyer. But lett us conster her meaninge to the best, with ymaginacion that her faith is without corruption, and that she is no lesse desyrous to see you then you (assotted upon her beautie) seame reddye to run thorow the fyer of a thousande perils, only to content her; will you by so vayne a pleasure, that is of lesse moment or abode then the thoughte of a man, at so deare a price as the losse of your honor and lyfe? Remember that the end of that

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE V enterprise can not be good, whose begining is not founded upon discrecion, and sequell governed by the rule of raison: neyther can you more greatlye deface the auncient renowme of your honor, nor leave a greater spot of reproche to your house and frendes that live after you, then to conlude and ende the course of your life, in the purseute of so dishonest a queste. And your enemyes can not so lardgelie triumphe in your overthrowe and deathe, as your frendes have cause to lamente that your owne rashenes and follie were the only furtherours of the fatall bane of your lyfe. Whereof, the contrary parte, yf, being cut in peces in the service of some noble prince, or yelde to the loare of nature in som valiant exploit or enterprise of warr, you shold not only aggravate the praise of your lyfe passed with the glorie of an honorable death, discharge your frendes and succession of al impositions of villanous infamie, but also force your enemyes to a conversion of their malice into a general comendacion of your vertue and undouted faith towards your prince. Besides, if you will wayghe the mortall plagcs threatened in the gospell to be thondered upon th'adulteror and suche as contaminat the married mans bedd, or rightly measure the penaunce of the falte with the foulnes of the fact, you shal not only judge with me that there is no lyfe more dampnable afore God, nor deathe more skandalus to the worlde, then to be overthrowne in the combat whiche of ryghte is due to bee performed by another; but also that there is more vertue and ease in sufferance, then profit or pleasure in hast, or comoditie in rashe execution. But, yf the power of the fleshe, prevayllynge above your resistance, hath sturred up this humor of hoat desier, whiche seames to presse you so far that you make no conscience to exchange your former glorie for a title or surname of a fylthie adulteror, go not so far to seke your destruction, seing Mantua presentes you with sufficient choise and change of releif, better cheape, and with less peril, then the hazarde of reputation or losse of lyfe.'

This charme of Delyo seamed so to enchante and drive reason into the waveringe mynde of the Myllanois, that hee tooke respite to replie till the nexte morninge, thanking him notwithstanding of his frendlie advertisementes, whiche

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

(saith he) have so unseeled the eyes of my mynde that I fynd myselfe now hable to discerne that whych love wold not suffer me earste to perceiue, and muche lesse to feare or doubt. Wherewith, retiringe to his lodginge, hee passed the nighte in the onely contemplacion of his fancie: wherein appered suche warr and contrarietie of thoughts, with figures of hollowe conceites, that the desyer and course of slepe, was whollie converted into an humor of uncerteine ymagynacions. And if, by chaunce, his eyes offred to cloase their liddes, and sommon the reste of the partes to the quiet reapposed in sleepe, the remembrance and care of his buysynes, interruptinge the office of the eyes, presented eftsones a new conflict and seconde supplie of his passion; in such sorte as, beyng to weake to resiste the alaram, he yelded to the stronger parte, whiche was the maisterles appetit of sensualitie; and, holdinge more deare the pleasures of the fleshe then the savegarde of his life, determined to take the forde, and trye if fortune wolde performe asmuche as shee seamed to promise by a flattering hope (whych appeared in his ydle braine) to embrace his mistres without daunger; ympartinge the nexte daye his resolucion to his deare frende Delyo. To whom saith he:—‘Because perills are commonly made greater by reapport then founde dangerous in th’adventure, and that all likelehodes seldom or never do happen, the valyant ought not to feare the thinge that is doubtfull, nor dread the simple movinge of a shadowe. Neyther is there glorie of the victorie, but where th’adventure exceedeth th’expectacion of men. Wherfore I am perswaded to geve a charg of the good will of fortune, and take my jorney towards Millan, tomorow; wher I bee sommoned wyth the writ of my destynies, or malicious dome of unhappye fortune by death. Myllan wyll serve me as well of a tombe as eyther Mantua or other santuarie of the worlde. Neyther can I make a better declaracion of my fayth towards my mistres then in defyenge the feare of so many perills, to appeare more readie to obey her commaundemente then curious and carefull of myne owne life: whyche I accompte ymployed with no lesse justice on her behalfe then honor to myselfe, if the same be put to extreme tormentes and utterlie

DISCOURSE

V

Perills be
greater in
reaport then
dangerous in
th’adventure.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE executed in the place wher the view of her own eyes may
V bee th'indifferent judges betwene my firme constancie and
small dissymulacion. Neyther can I leave her a more precious
pawne of myne indissoluble love, then, beinge cut in peces
in the pursewte of her service, to leave the walls and posterns
of her pallais painted, and all to besprent, with the bloode
of the most loyal servant and frend that ever bare name to
do honor or service to any of that noble sect.' 'Your
desperat resolucion' (saith Delyo) 'excedinge all th'experi-
ence I have harde or redd of any that have bene possessed
with the like infection, argueth the unbridled humor of love
to be a kynde of rage, a thousand times more straunge and
lesse reasonable then cyther the burning fever, or frantike
maladie of suche as are affected with the fury of frenzye.
For what greater follie, or rather desperacion, can be noted
in the madman then to ronnc headlong in to the middest of
the fyer, or commit himselfe unarmed to the mercie of the
glaves and sharp swords of his enemie?' How may a man
tearme this same amarus rage, and effect of smal reason and
lesse discrecion, which accompanie suche as make themselves a
prais to their proper sensualitie, if not some spirite or lynne
of Sathan, sent to torment us in making us th'abhominable
workmen of such miracles of mischief? And he that sayth
that love procedeth other wayes then of ourselves, seameth
rather to mocke the truth then hable to justefy his argument
by approved authorities; seing the mischief is derived of our-
selves, and norished of the corruption of our nature, whose
wicked force prevaieth so much over the gifte of our under-
standing, and darkeneth the vertue of the spirit, that wee are
denied to se, and muche lesse to treade, the pathe of our dutie,
honestie, or conscience. But th'amaronus crew of fryvolus
lovers now a dayes, cyther to support their dampnable enter-
prises with a boulster or showe of a newfounde vertue, or to
set a more braverie of their doinges then cyther reason or
conscience will allow, or rather to make their secte favored
with a fame or name of perpetuitie, have devised to christen
their follie by the name of sincere and true loyaltie; whiche
they also forget not to confirme by the title of constancie;
as thoughe without the hazarde of the soule, and absolute

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

destruction of the bodie, suche execrable villenies and abuses of men colde beare the name, or be registred in the booke, of vertue. Wherin albeit I cold bee assisted with infinities of examples both familiar and aunciente, yet, because such discourse wold rather seame tedious then thankful to the guiltie mynds of a nomber of our contreyemen, I am content to dismisse al antiquities, and pursewe my allegacion with th' authoritytie of this Cornelio; who, rather enchaunted then ravished with the remembrance of his ladye and suggestion of his own follie, tolde Delio for ende, that if all the waies betwen Mantua and Myllan were strewed or pitched with rasors, and everye gate and windowe decked with the doble cannon readie charged to salute hym at his cominge, yet, making litle or none accompte of these mortal perils in respect of the dutie he seamed to owe to his deare Plaudina, he failed not to begyn to perform the sommone of her letter the next morning: when, with ij servants no lesse strange to him, then unknowen to al men, and himselve attyred in the wede of a marchant travellor, he departed Mantua at the opening of the gates. And marching no lesse spedelie then by secrete and unknowen pathes, he measured his time according to th' importance and danger of his enterprise, in such sort as he gat within the walls of Myllan at the verie last glymmer and cloasing of the evening: wher, refusing the house of his mother, because the prospect, opening upon the pallais of hys chiefeste enemye, seamed more apte to discover, then hable to hyde hys being ther, he addressed to a deare frende of his, called Monsieur Ambrosio, where beyng let in, in the darkest of the evenyng, he was lodged in a lowe chamber, joyned as a pendle to th' uttermost corner of the house, most convenient to worke his secret misterye.

His first indevor after his saffe arryval at Millan, was to send for an appoticarye whose fidelitie he had earst proved in the enterchaunge and conveighe of diverse letters betwene his ladie and hym; who, not so much amazed to see hym whom he loked not for as glad of his comminge for the contentement of Plaudina, assured hym of the departure of her husbände. His second diligence appeared in th' expedicion he used to advertise his mistrys of his commynge; whom he

DISCOURSE

V

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE requested by a letter, under the conduit of this colcarior, to
v appoint a convenient leasure, that he might speake to her in
secret. 'For' (saith he) 'the conference I have to impart
with you, is of other importance then to be debated in the
hearyng of witnesses, and much lesse recorded by anye then
the only presence of ourselves.'

The ladye, althoughe she desired nothyng so muche as the
presence of her servant, whose only comyng seamed almoste
to make her excede the bondes of reason for joye, yet was
she semblable traunced in a passion of dreedefull conceites
and doubtfull feare: the one for that she feared the malice
of the Frenchemen, the rather because they extended weekely
a pryve searche uppon all the houses and places whych they
judged frendes to Cornelio; the other and chiefe cause of
her dollor was, for that by the wronge datyng of her letter,
she failed of the daye of the departure of her husbande;
whereby she had not only procured to hym a more daunger
then neded, but also abused his adventure in beyng not
hable to give so longe a time to their pleasures as he justely
deserved and they bothe desired. Notwithstandyng, she
retorned the messenger with a gentle aunswere, wherein,
above all other thinges, she gave singler comendacion to
his firme loyaltie, and no lesse falte to her owne follie and
rashenes; whyche, because she woulde not onely excuse, but
also countervaile, or rather excede, wyth a recompence to his
contentacion, she willed hym by the messenger to passe by
the gate in the attire of a masquer, where she woulde attende
his commyng about x or xi of the clocke the same evenyng,
resolyng uppon a certeine watche word or other secret in-
structions whereby she mighte discerne hym from the reste
of his felowshipp. Yt is to bee thoughte Cornelio did
neyther mislike the message, and muche lesse forgett the
hower of appointmente, nor yet seame a cowarde in this
chiefest exployte of his adventure. I am rather of opinion,
that his foolishhe rashenes dyd so much excede the vertue of
the minde, that yf the whole garrison of the Frenchemen had
bene encamped in the streeete, and redie to receyve hym
uppon the pointe of their pickes, he woulde rather have
accepted the offer of present death then lost so good an

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

V

occasion to encounter a simple glaunce or glee of his greate frende ; who, no lesse mindefull of her promisse then readie to performe it wyth a double diligence, in hope to enjoye an interest of suche pleasure as love yeldes to suche as Fortune makes happie and hable to receive, attended hys commynge at the place and hower of accorde. And as she was one of the best courtiars, passinge the rest of the traine and troupe of ladies in beautie, behaviour, and other giftes of flatteryng showe ; so was she more courted wyth the continual haunts and companie of the gentlemen and princes of Italy then any other of what degre so ever she were ; in such sorte as, at the instante and present approche of her servant, she was devisinge familiarlye with diverse gentlemen of the citie ; who, seing this masque noblie mounted after the Spanishe order, make their staye afore Plaudina. And she, for her part, accepting their curtesye with a countenance more thankeful then of ordinarie, judged his embassage to the ladye to neede neyther secret witnes nor publike audience. Wherefore, not ignorant in th' office of humanitie, and because their presence shold seame no impediment to the proffit or pleasure of another, they toke leave of Plaudina resigning the camppe and capteine to the marchant straunger ; whom, yf they had knowen, they would suerlie have rated the penny worthes of that praye at to deare a price for him to have caried away without a gage or pawne no lesse pretious then his lyfe.

Here, although the fortune of Cornelio had blessed him with doble felicitie at one instant, bothe in avoydng the place of companie and yelding hym large viewe of the presence of his mistreys without interupcion, yet love seamed to sturr up suche alteracions and diversaty of amaze within him that the use of his tonge was not only taken away, and the reste of his partes retired to a quyveryng feare, but also his eyes were so resolved in the gredy gaze of her bewtie, that, in place to do her honor with any devise or show of hys dutie by wordes, he broughte her in terror with the viewe of his dombe behavior ; resembling rather the ghastly figure of Zelio Polino, whom the poetes, fayning to be enchanted by his wyfe, do affirme that for the pennance of his offence and abuse towards her, he is bounde upright

Cornelio
astonied in
the presence
of his ladye.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE agaynst a wall with a gag in his mouthe, without licence or libertye to speake til she pul the pegge from betwene his jawes. So Cornelio, albeit he was an orator sufficient enough, and specially in disputation of love, yet founde he here hys tongue so punished with the pennance of Polino, that he colde neither pleade for hymself at lardge, nor yet playe the parte of a stotting solicitor; till the longe viewe of her proporcion of majestie unseelyng hes eyes, lent hym also a countercharme to take away the misterie of his hiddeus traunce, with comission to make a breache of his scilence, and restore hym to th' use and libertie of his tonge, whyche he exposed as a tryall of his newe benefit in this sort:—

Cornelio
speketh to
his ladye.

‘Yf all the giftes and good tornes whiche Fortune ever bestowed uppon suche as received frendship or favor at her hande were here presented unto me, with licence and libertie to chuse whiche I wolde have, I doute whether I colde pike oute one of suche a nomber, that were hable to countervaile the greatnes of my present encounter, or if they al had power to yelde me such contentement as I fynde in the contemplacion and regarde of your devine bewtye. And, for your parte, good madam, what greater proff can you have of the honor and service, with unfayned loyalte, I have longe vowed unto you then, for the only respect of the dutie I owe you, to see me comitt that which is, and oughte to bee, moste deare to al men, to the hazarde of a thousande perilles. Wherein, notwithstanding, yf the god of my destynies hath agreed to toche me with the malice of hys dome, and publishe my sentence of death in this place, I excuse hym of present rigour—for that he hath deferred me hetherunto—and accomptes great justice in this fatal execution, seyng youre self shal be judge with what integretie I have served you since the first vowe and mocion of my affection.’ Wherunto Plaudina replied:—‘Yf you thinke you so depelie in the debte of Fortune, for the simple offer of so small a frendshypp, I accompte my selfe no lesse bounde to yelde her doble sacrafyze of semblable thankesgyvyng; not for that she hath added so greate a daunger to the declaration of your goodwill, (whereof I never dowted) but because in grauntynge us a mutuall accesse and presence together,

Lyfe.

Plaudina re-
plieth to her
servant.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

I maye (thoughe not so amplye as I wolde, and as you have deserved, yet in some parte) yeelde you the meede of so greate a merit. Yf you accompte the pleasure in death (happenynge in the pursute of this adventure) peculiar to yourselfe, you doo wronge to the sincere love and loyall affection of youre deare Plaudina; who, resolved to passe under the same sentence, will neythe excede you in lengthe of lyf, nor gyve you anye place in firme constancie of mynde. Neyther doo I greatlye feare the threates of present daunger, considerynge your auncient felicitie, whyche hathe alwayes delyvered you in anye your attemptes what difficultie soever appered in them. Onelye I quarrell with myne owne follye in mystakynge the daye of the departure of my husbände; and greve no lesse with th'yniquitie of presente tyme, who, envyeng (as yt seames) our amarus enterprise, is readie to abridge the course of our desyered pleasure, wyth a suddaine retourne of hym whom I wishe without eyes in th' uttermost ende of th' orient. Notwithstandynge, as the faultes proceding from rashe oversight or ignorance are rather excusable then meritorious of free pardon, so, althoughe I have offended grevously, yet do I not dispaire of mercie, consideryng that, besides the confession of the faulte, I yelde me to suche pennance as shall please you to enjoyne me; which, also, you shall fynde me readie to performe, if, at the firste hower after this midnight, you comme hether in as secret a maner as you can, and striking but once uppon the clapper of the wicket, oure Janiquetta (whom you know hath bene heretofore a messenger of our love) shall open the gate and conveighe you into a place of pleasant torments; where, yf you fynde youre selfe greved with anye wronge I have don you, you may paye the revenge with such interest as you thinke good.' Wherewith, albeit Cornelio grudged at the spedie retourne of the goodman, yet, convertyng the passion of those heavy newes into a conceite of present gladnes for the franke and liberall consent of his ladye, he contented hymselfe with the offer of hys tyme and fortune, and yeldyng a lowe reverence to hys loftye Plaudina, retired in haste to his lodgyng; where, attendynge the approche of his hower of appointe-

DISCOURSE

V

Her husband.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE

V

ment, wyth no lesse devocion then the papistes in Fraunce performe their ydolatrous pilgrimage to theyr ydoll Sainct Tronyon, uppon the Mont Auyon besides Roan, or our supersticious catholikes of England of late dayes to the holye Roode of Chester, or ymage of our Ladye at Walsingham, he seamed to attire himselfe for the bed as though he woulde not sturre out of his chamber that nyghte. By whiche semblance or dissimuled showe, he dismissed the companie that was with hym, shuttingge the windowes and doares of his lodgyng, tyll the deade tyme of the nyghte, sommonyng all sortes of people to reste, seamed to putt hym in remembraunce of hys promisse and the thyng he chiefly desyered to performe; so that, arminge himself only with slevs of male, and a naked rapiour under his mantell, he marched towards the pallais of Plaudina, wythe more haste then good speede, and lesse assuraunce of savetye then likelihod of good lucke. For, as he accompted himselfe no lesse free from all daungers then farre from any occasion or offer of perill, so Fortune, displayinge the flagge of her malice, encountred hym suddainely with a desaster exceedyng his expectation; whereby she warned hym (as it were) of the ambushe of future evils whiche were readye to discover themselves. And albeit this firste accident was nothinge in respect of the other straung mischiefs which she ceased not to thonder uppon hym, one in the necke of another, afore the ende of his enterprise, yet it oughte to have sufficed to have revoked, and made hym cross saile, from the pursute of so bad an adventure; seinge withal there appeared neyther reason in the attempt, nor honestie in the victorye. But who doubteth that the luste of the bodye is not the chiefest thinge that infecteth the minde wyth all syn; and that the beautie of a woman dothe not onely drawe and subdue the outwarde partes, but also levyeth suche sharpp assaultes to the inwarde forces of the mynde not sewerly rampierd in vertue, that they are not onely denyed to eschewe suche thinges as bee undoubtedly hurtefull bothe to the bodye and soule, but also drawen to desyer that which they ought not to ymagine, and much more abhorre to do as a thyng of greate detestation? Besides,

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

love is of so venturous a disposition, sturring up such corage in the hartes of those champions whome he possesseth, that he makes them not onely unmindefull of all daungers, but also to seame hable to passe the lymittes of the son, wyth power to excede the bondes of Hercules and Bacchus. Neyther makes he anye thinge unlawfull, whiche he thinketh reasonable, nor gyveth glorie to that enterpryse whiche is not accompanied with infynitie of perills. But as the wise man wisheth all estates to deliberat at large afore the devise bee put in execution, yeldyng no difference of rewarde, with a successe of semblable and equall effecte, to hym that rashely crediteth th'advise of hymselfe, and suche as committ theyr bodyes and doinges to one stroake of fortune; so are we warned, by th'authoritie of the same principle, to examyne the circumstaunce of our enterpryses, and caste the good and evill that maye happen wyth so sewer and steddye a judgement that there can no daunger so soone appeare, but we maye bee assisted wyth the choice of ii or iij remedies to repress hym. Wherein, if Cornelio had bene as throwly instructed as he seamed altogether infected with the humour of follye, he neded not have fallen into suche daunger as he doubted least, nor dispaire of that whiche he seamed to desyer moste, and muche lesse assailed, even in the begynnyng and brunt of hys buysynes, wyth that suddaine feare, whiche earst he was not hable to ymagine, and nowe as unlykely and unprovided to shon. For as he attended the commyng of Janiqueta to open the doare, beholde! there ronge in his eares a greate brute or noyse of the clatteringe of naked weapons and men in harneys, seaminge (as it was indeede) a set fraye betwene ij enemies in the ende or corner of the same streete, which was so hoatlye pursued, that one of the skirmishers, beinge hurte to the death, brake out of the presse, and, fleinge towards the place where Cornelio stode, fainted and fell downe dead at his feete, even as the maide opened the wicket to take hym in. Whiche was not so secretlye don, but the eyes of certeine neighbours, beholdyng the frave oute of their windowes, discovered the goyng of Cornelio with a naked sworde in his hande. Whereupon followed the alarme to the innocent lover, as

DISCOURSE

V

Love makes a man valiant, or rather folishe hardie.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE you shall heare hereafter. But beinge within the courte, and
V the gates shotte againe, he was leed by the litle *Darioletta*
of their love, into a garderober, or inner gallery, till the
servantes were retired to reste; who, for the most parte,
laye out of the house that night, beinge busye in visiting
the banquettes abroade, accordyng to the epicure order of
sondrye contreys in Christendome duryng the season of
Shroftide, when diverse gluttons delite in nothing but to do
sacrifyce to their belly. And having the reste sewerly
loeked in their chambers, and all occasions of suspicion or
feare eyther prevented or provided for (as they thought)
Plaudina sent for her servant into her chamber, thinking to
worke th'effect of both their desyers, and plante the married
mans badge in the browes of her husbände being absent.
But here they made their reckoning without their ost,
and were forced to rise from the banquet rather with
increase of appetyt then satisfied with the delicat dishes
they desyered to feede upon. For as they had newly
begon the preamble to the parte they ment to plaie, and
entred into th'amarous exercise of kissinge and embrasinge
eche other—whercof neyther the one nor th'other hadde
earst made assaie together—beinge at the pointe to laye
their handes to the last indevor and effect of love (which
the Frenchemme calleth *Le don d'amoureuse mercy*) they
harde a greate noyse and horley-borley in the streete, of the
garde and chiefe officers of the watche; who, fyndinge the
deade bodey at the doare of Plaudina, began to make such
inquisition of the murther, wyth threatenynge charge to
understande the manner and cause of his deathe, that,
amongest the neyghbours whyche behelde the fraie, there
was one affyrmed that, at the same instant that the broyle
was moste hoat, he sawe a tall yonge gentleman let in at
the gates of Plaudina, with a sworde in his hande, armed
on the armes wyth sleeves of male. Wherupon the captaine
of the watche beganne to bounce at the doare, as though
his force hadde bene hable to beate downe the walls; wyth
suche a rowte and companye of Frenchemme assistynge hys
angrye indevor, that botlie the one and the other of oure
lovers seamed indifferently passioned wyth semblable feare—

An order not
necessarie for
a common
wealth.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

the one dowtyng thys soddayne sturre and uproar of the Frenchmen to be rather a pryvye searche to entrappe him then an *inquirendum* for the murdor, wherof he was no less ignorant then innocent; the other despairing no lesse of the delyvery of her frende, yf he fell once unhappelye into the handes of th'ennemye, then doubtyng the dyscoverye of her owne dishonestie, beinge knowen to conceile a stranger in the secret corners of her house. Wherein havying, albeit, but bad choice of meanes to avoyde suche ii threatenynge evils, and lesse tyme to take councell of their present perill, yet, beyng of opynion that in the savetye of the one consisted the sewertye of theym bothe, shee used the pollicie of the wise maryner or shypmaister, who, in the furye of a storme wil not sticke to prevent the destruction of the whole with the losse of the lesser parte, and, bestowyng his wares of precius value in the sewrest romethes of his shyp, makes no conscience in suche an extremety to expose the reste to the mercie of th'angrye waves: so knowynge that, yf Cornelio were not discovered, the matter woulde neyther growe to suspicion, and muche lesse to daunger or cause of feare, she willed hym to mounthe into the middest of a narrowe chymney; where, beyng denied scoape to sytt or leane sometimes for his ease, the litlnes of the place gave hym onely licence to stande uprighte upon a barr of yron, rammed with stoane and mortar in bothe sydes of the chymney; where, havynge his sworde drawn in his hande, he resembled th'ymage of some Jupiter holdynge a thonderbolte betwene hys fyngers, readye to throwe at suche as, disquietynge hys sleepe, do hunte the litle cryckettes chirpyng in the walles and crevisses in the earthe. And herselfe, as more hardye, or rather readye of wytt in extremeties, descendes to the court wyth all the keyes of her howsse in her hande, amongst the rude watche; where, after she had founde the capteine, she forgatt not to fordge sondrye causes of grudge against his discourtesye, reprehendynge his inorderly dealynge with many waspische wordes; but chiefly for that at so indecent an hower, and unseamelie order, he soughte to abuse the reputacion of her husbände, in breakyng open the doares of his pallys and that in his

DISCOURSE

V

A woman
more readye
of witt then
a man in
extremeties.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE absence. Wherewith, albeyt her complaint seamed to im-
V porte a semblance of justice, with no lesse reason on her
behalfe, yet the neyghbour or firste accuser, advowchynge
eftesones his confession, forced the capteine (half agaynste
his wil) to follow the searche. Whereuppon, he had the
keyes delivered, with libertie to ransecke eche corner and
cabynet of the house at his pleasure. Wherein he omitted
neyther diligence in execution, nor pollicye in the searche.
For there was no coffer escaped without his bottom torned
upwarde: everye bedd and bolster was tryed with the point
of a sharpp dagger; and no benche nor hollowe place apte
to hyde a tennes ball was dispenced from the malice of
thies rakehells of the wache. But when the Frenchemen
in armor came into the chamber where our Cornelio was
rammed up in the tewell of a chymney, God knoweth
whether he wished hym at Mantua with hys frende Delio
or no! And you lovers that have passed the lyke straites
maye better judge his passion then I hable to reoport the
misterie: but, methynkes I heare hym curse, and comitt to
the devil, both love and all hys practises. And beynge in
continuell expectacion that some roostye halbarde shoulde
bee throste upp into the chymney where he stode, I thynke
at that instante he powred oute more prayers to God for his
deliverie then ever afore hee made requestes or petitions to
hys ladie to enjoy her beautie. Neyther ys it lyke that his
appetit continued, or his amarus humor, so fervent as hys
desyer greate to be further frome the place of suche daunger.
Albeyt as yt is a generall rule that one evil never cometh
alone, so this feare was not so greate as the future pen-
nance of harde digestion. Neyther had he scarce tyme to
take breathe afore he was assailed with a seconde misfor-
tune. For, understandynge the wache to bee retired, and
the whole guarryson of th'ennemies without the gates,
wheruppon (beyng at the point to disceend from his smoaky
pavillion, as one that accompted himself past the feare of
fortune) beholde! the goodman alyghted at the doare; who,
fyndynge the streetes pestered with people in armor, hys
doares open, with hys house confused and all thynges out
of order, was no lesse astonied then he had cause, and yet

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

V

not so abashed at the straungenes of the thyng as hys wyfe in doble dispair of meanes to avoyde thys seconde inconvenience. Albeit as increase of perill, sturrynge upp a freshe supplie of shyftes, pearseth the uttermoste corner of the wittes, so Plaudina, standyng betwene the present offer of open shame and the malice of a most unhappy fortune, was dryven to retire to the benefitt of that gyfte whiche the philosopher attribytes in comon to al women, sayinge that, in an extremety, the witt of a woman is so muche at commaundement, that she is as sewer of a shyfte as certaine of her lyfe. And makynge of necessitie a vertue, she used suche artificial sleighte in bleiring the eyes of the goodman John her husband, that he allowed greatlye the honest diligence of his wyfe, and blamed altogether th'abuse of the capteyne whome he threatened to requyte with semblable curtesye. Wherin, as she dowed nothing of the tractable nature of her simple husbände (beyng glad notwithstanding to have so smothly appeased the humor of his just anger), so she accompted herselfe neyther free from cause of feare, nor quite deliverd from distresse, till she had made a meane to manifest the comming of her husbände to her lover in the chymneye; whom, as she knew to be passed the feare of the Frenchemen, so, dowyng he wold dread no further daunger, but discende ymediatly from his frozen mewe, toke her goodman by the hande and led hym from place to place where the watche had lefte al thynges out of order, bringing hym at last into the chamber where Cornelio stoode, like a crowe in a gutter, or an oracle to give aunswer to suche as are desyerus to bee resolved of doweftull demaundes. And albeit the vyolence of the frost with the nyppyng season of the wynter had so pinched al his partes with extremety of cold, together with the passion of feare which he felte duringe his abode in hys narrow castell or cage of small ease, that the pennance he indured seamed rather to excede the haynous respect of his offence then a sufficient punishment for his falte (beyng only a desyer, and no vyolacion, nor act don) yet the veraye voice of her husbände restored hym to suche treble perplexitie, that he seamed to feele th'approche and uttermost summonce of hys fates, and

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE

V

Necessitie
geveth corag
to the fainte
harte.

passee thorowe the laste traunce and passion of lyfe. For, beyng escaped from the daunger he feared most, he sawe hymself subject to th' adversatyte he dowted leaste. Wherin, also, as the present viewe of hys seconde perill renewed a lyvelye remembrance of hys daunger paste, presentyng more ympedymentes to hys delyverye then meanes or wayes to escape, so, yf yt were not that necessitie geveth corage to the faint stomacke, and dispaire bryngeth often tymes a cause of good hope, I thynke (in defyenge all the delays and dallyenges of fortune) he had at that instant abridged the pursute of his amarus enterprise, and naturall course of his owne lyfe, by showyng a tomlinge caste from the topp, or greeselye rooff, of his grymie pallas.

But Plaudina had doble reason in her devise; both to advertise her lover (as yt were in a visyon) that, albeit he was bounde to too longe a devocion in so unseamelye a temple, yet he shoulde not dispaire of the goodnes of a better fortune, and, also, not to seame jalous of her indevor and diligence in the redresse of his case, for that she colde not (without great argument of suspicion) habandon the companie of her husbände, till she had got him to bed. Wherein, notwithstanding, her pollecie was no lesse frustrate, and she eftsones deceived, then the poore ymage in the chemney assailed with the malice of a third mischief: for her husbände, beyng in bed in hys owne eabynet, commaunded ii of his men that had attended him in his jorney to lye in the chamber wher Cornelio had passed the mistery of so many trances; which, albeit Plaudina resisted to th' uttermost she cold do, yet (mauger her hart) the authority of the goodman prevailed. Albeit, dowting the cold villains (rydyng all day in the frost) wolde have made a fier in the chymney, and either sacrased the sained, that ment nothing lesse then to become a burnt offringe, or smothered as an innocent that deserved not suche purgatorye, she gave speciall charge not to light so much as a candle within the chimney. For the rest, she prayed that the god and patrone of true lovers wold take such compassion of his present distresse, that if he denied him for that time the due guerdon of his rare and firme loyalty, yet, at the leaste, hee wolde graunte

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

him dispencc and saffe conduit to passe thorow the pikes of his infortunat dangers. And as she was thus in earnest contemplacion to the majestie of the blinde god of Love for the safe delyverye of her frende, wyth no lesse care how to redeme him from the fylthye dongeon of the hollowe chymney wythout the raunsom of publike reproche to herselfe and doble daunger to hym; and he, also, for his parte, tyering of a patience perforce, with some hope and likelihod of good lucke notwithstandinge (for that alreadie he had escaped suche iii hoat skirmishes of Fortune, whom he judged now to have drawen the thred of her spite to an ende), beholde! the alaram of the iiiii assalte, more vyolent then any of the rest, and excedinge them all in absolute argumentes of perentory perills. For the justice, not satisfied of the morder, and harpinge still uppon the confession of him that first opened the presumpcion, sent hym in the garde of certeine officers to the Lord Momboyer, chiefe of the senat afore whom he had advowched (with new othe) the perticularyties of his former deposicion; wherupon was enjoyned estesones a straitte commandement to the justice to make a seconde searche in the house of Plaudina; who, if she were now more amazed then afore, and almost at point to yeld to dispair, it is to be thought pore Cornelio had no lesse cause of disquiet: for that, yeldinge himself alreadie discovered by his enemies, he judged the new broyle and clattering of rostye halbardes, to be messengers sente by the judge to apprehende him. Wherein his opinion was the rather confirmed; for that, assone as they were within the house, and afore the good man colde make himselfe readie to meete them, they made no staie till they came to the chamber of the selly hous-dove in the chymney: wher fynding by evill happ a case with dagges, and other weapons of suspicion, brought thether by the ii servantes sleping in their owne misfortune, rather wearve with their longe jorneye then likely to commit a morder, they condemned them by and by as guiltie of the fact. Wherwyth, omittinge no rigour of their office, they coppled the ii innocentes together in a scarffe of hemp. Wherin, as the goodman made hast to come to the reskew of his men, he was encountred by the

DISCOURSE

V

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE way by certeine sergeants or crymynall officers; who, arresting him as prysoner on the behalfe of the kinge, ledd hym
V captytte to the castell amongst the rest of his miserable servantes. Neyther colde hee bee suffred to commence matter for his own justifycacion, nor have indifferencie in excusing th'innocency of his men; such was the rage of these rakehells and officers of hel, who are commonly more prest to oppresse innocencie by vyolence then readie to doo justice sincerelie, accordynge to theyr othe and dutie.

Here, although Fortune began to change complexion, and moderate somewhat her angrye clymat towards our sorowful lovers, by lockyng the husband wyth the moste of his servantes in close pryson, yet this happie torne of her wheele unloked for, seamed such a myst to the mind of Cornelio, that he was not hable to descerne that which his hart dyd dyvayne, nor beleve that fortune, upon such a soddaine, cold convert her angrye and wrathful humor into suche spedie compassion. Neyther cold the conceites of his doubtfull harte geve other judgement, then that the laste retire and departure of the garde was rather a vision or dreame then a thing of effect. Such bee the ordynary allaroms appointed to quarrell with the doubtfull mynd; who, in an extremetie, is alwaies more apt to ymagyn the worst then hable to beleve, or geve credyt to, thinges that bee true. And when daunger and peril occupie the place, confydence is often torned into feare; and feare is of such force that it doth not only denie us to use councel in our evill, but makes us (for the moste part) to refuse the thinge that shoulde be our most savegarde. Wherein the poore Cornelio seamed no lesse passioned then afore, and assailed rather with doble dispair then hable to admit any simple proffer of hope; in such sorte as, devisinge to what to vowe himselfe, he put his speciall and chiefe confidence at laste in his praiers to the greate God; whom he desyered above all thinges, with teares, to defend his deare Plaudina from any note of infamie or shame by his meanes; and for himselfe, if his glasse were now run out, and the dome of his extreme destynies colde bee no longer deferred, that at the leaste hee would, by the hand of some aungell and other vertue of great miracle, bestow him in

The doubtfull mynd is rather apt to beleve the worste then credyt thinges that bee true.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

some soile unknowen, afore the fates had ful power to execute the uttermost of their rigorous commission; protesting, notwithstandinge, that if he might bee despensd withall for this one falt, never to be founde so forgetfull of himselfe hereafter, if God and nature weere content to seele him an assurance of the race and yeres of Nestor. Plaudina, on th'other syde, seamed indyffrentlye passioned betwene dissembled sorow and assured gladnes, a forced grudge and an unfained joye; grevinge in the one, for th'imprisonement of her husband, whose innocencye shee knew dyd warrant his delyverie, and rejoycinge in the other, for that, contrary to her expectacion, Fortune had made the way open, and geven her consent for the consummacion of the banquet with her languishinge lover; whose safe and happie perservacion seamed more to delite her thenne the remembrance of the hard and wrongful ymprisonement of her husband greved her. Neyther was she so carefull to redeme him from captivitee as readie wyth great devocion to geve Love and Fortune their peculyar thankes: the one, for that, in preserving his champions from the malice of daunger and marke of open shame, he seamed to restore the felde, and assist them with saccour, whenne they dispaired most of consolacion; the other, for that, contrary to her nature and custume, she had torned their manifold afflictions into a pleasure more precious and acceptable then al the desasters of the whole worlde seamed grevous or hurtfull. In which passion of joye shee mounted into the chamber of Jacke of the clockhouse; who, resembling a red heyring dryed in the smoake agaynst the beginning of the next Lent, attended her comming wyth no lesse devocion then the Jews expect their Messias. And, albeit, the approch of present joye, forcinge some teares in remembrance of the feare passed, seamed for the time to take away the use and libertie of her tongue, yet she cut of the trance of that pleasant sorowe, without th'assistance of any speciall countercharme other then that whych proceded of a vehement desver to behold and speake wyth her frende in the chymney. Wherefore, after she had dryed and drained the wet humor of her waterie eyes, and dismissed all argumentes of former dule, she retired

DISCOURSE

V

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE

v

to her auncient complexion of joy, and calling with a smyling voice to him in the topp of the rooffe, willed him to discend hardly from his dark troane and theatric of hell: 'wher' (sayth she) 'if God had not devised the meane of your delverie, and seamed willing that you shold receive the due guerdon of your loyaltie, in consenting to commit my husband to prison, you had stil remeined there, norished with the vapour of the moone, longer then eyther I wold have wished or had bene necessarie for your health.' Here, albeit Cornelio was sufficiently perswaded of the voice of his ladie, and that he knew all the house to be voyed of suspicion or cause of further daunger, yet the remembrance of his perill passed presented such a feare to fall eftsones into the like perplexion, that hee neyther beleved that which hee harde, nor durst forsake his habytacion on highe, til he was somoned the second tyme by his Plaudina; who, by the help of her woman, reared a lather to the top of the loft where the grymy roode stode; who, beinge discended and in the presence of his ladie, seamed no lesse amased then those desolate or, rather, dronken creatures, who, wandring the night by unknowen waies, do thinke themselves guided by the vision of some ill spirit. And the wanton ladie, on th'other syde, seing the ghastlie astonishment of her frende, not much unlike in complexion to the chymney sweepers cominge out of the yle of Bergamasqua, cold not so moderat her present gladnes, but, burstinge into a soddaine laughter, shee seamed to crucifye the remembrance of the tragedie passed wythe the singler contentment she toke in beholdinge her Cornelio, dyed (as it were) in the smotheringe tanfat of hyddeous collours. And, albeit, (you lovers) who, for a simple glee and respect of favor of your ladies, have earste bene sprinkled with the water of semblable affliction, and (after getting th'upper hand of your fortune) possesse the presence of your dames in such oglye and deformed attire, canne best judge of the present case of Cornelio: I meane whether hee hadde more cause of shame then astonishmente, juste anger against hys fortune, or reason to exclaime his mishappe, chieflie for that he found himself so brave a companion in the lothsom badge or lyverye of the chymneye;

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

V

and whether he had so greate courage to communicate wyth his Plaudina, resembling the blacke knight or feryman of Zenoloz, as he showed hymselfe valyant in th'attempte of an enterpryse of so great adventure. Yet th'authorytie of my historye advoucheth thus farre of his doinges at that tyme, that, notwithstandinge the malice and diversitie of all his mishapps, with the perfumed figure and greselie show of himselfe, he neyther loste corage to demaunde the due meede and hyer of his daungerous traveile, nor forgat to do sacrafise to his Fortune for the retorn of her frendshippe; affirminge there that they dyd her wronge that christened her by the name of cruell, and suche no lesse abused her that tearmed her by the title of an unrightuous or rigorous judge, consideringe she doth but justice sometime to checke or chasten our offences, and we no reason to pleade for our selves but by appelacion to the pryviledge of her favor. 'Neyther is she cruell for ever, nor so maliciouslye bente in the begynning, but shee is hable and will use moderacion in her angrie moode, and restore us in the end to treble contentacion. And likewise' (sayth hee) 'as the poore traveller in a strange contrey, havynge once passed diverse light perills and daungers of no great ymportaunce, is not only made stronger to encounter greater inconveniences, but also restored to a marvelous contentment and quiet of minde, when, without daunger, hee may enjoye his rest, and record his perills paste. Even so Fortune this night hath geven us an experience of diverse desasters, bothe to use her advertisemente as a speciall armour to resyste th'assaltes of semblable accidents hereafter, and also to confirme our affections with a stronger or undoubted unytie; makinge the pleasures of our love of greater price and moment after so sharp stormes of raging tempestes. And what is hee that is worthie to taste of the delites and pleasures of the worlde, that is not hable to digeste one simple pill of bitter confection. Neyther dothe hope dekaie but with the ende of life; and the vertue of a most true and invincible lovaltie is never frustrate nor voyed of his rewarde. And toching the stormes paste, my deare Plaudina,' sayth he, 'like as it is a chiefe consolacion to a man in calamytie to knowe his mis-

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE
V

happ, so there is also a speciall comfort that followeth the remembrance of the evils whiche wee have alredie suffred, and a treble contentment beinge permitted to recorde them wythout daunger. And hee that is desierous to bee crowned with the garland and glorie of victorie, must not feare the malice of perill nor hazarde of lyfe; for who contemneth death, escapeth his malice; but such as feare and flee from hym, do often fal into his daunger. Neither is there lesse fame in the valyant adventure then in the fortunat victorie. And, for my parte, if my lyfe had ended in th' assalte of any of these distresses, the same had not exceded a simple oblation of my dutie towards you; whiche also had followed wyth no lesse expedicion then I had great desyer to geve you so unfayned a shewe of my service, if in the verye act had not appeared a manifest derogacion and cause of infamie to your honor.' Wherwith meaninge yet to prolonge his discourse, hee was interrupted with the replie of Plaudina; who, more desyerous to taste of the pleasures to come then willinge cftsones to prefer a second view of the mischieves passed, wished hym to dismisse the remembraunce of their former perils, and seame more willyng to embrace the gyfte of present time. 'For there is not so greate consolacion in the recorde of our miserie past, as cause of worthie annoye, if we seame unthankfull to the newe offer or gyfte of oure fortune. And albeit,' sayth she, some what smylinge, 'that your boldnes was more then deserved praise, yet your felicitye, you see, hath defended you from perill; and the rashnes of the valyaunt is often times tourned into an encrease of his glorye, with double contentment not loked for.' Wherwith embracinge her Cornelio, she helped to disformishe hym of his loathsom attire. And, after he had purified his grynye bodye in ij or iij baines, made for the purpose by the chambriere whilst they were in discourse, they entred together the lystes in a faire feelde bed readye dressed, armed onely with naked weapons: where it is no lesse harde for the ignorant to judge their encounters, then impossible for th' absent to witnes who wan the price of the battayle. Onelye I leave the sentence of them both to the resolucion of you (my lordes) that have or wolde bee speciall stiklors in such a combat.

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

V

But thus muche I maye ymagine without offence, that the innocent hornsbye, in the castell founde not so muche pleasure in his prison, as Cornelio toke delite, beinge the lieutenant of his bedd, in dauncinge the married mans rounde without other musicke then the instrument of his wyfe. Which both, triumphynge indiffyrentlye over the infortunat and miserable birde in the cage, and ratinge the pleasures of the rest of that nighte, with an advantage of vij or viij dayes more, at what interest they thought goode, forgat not to dob hym that was absent, Knighte of the forqued order of Vulcan. And albeit Fortune shewed heare a marvellous partialitie and conninge in the conveigh of this buysines, (I meane to advaunce the attempte of the lover, by the oppression and unjust captivitie of the innocent husbände) yet was not her favor to cleare, but there appeared a threatenynge sommonce of spedie change; for that the goodman beinge justified with in vj or vij dayes tryall, was redemed from prison. Whose delyverie was not so acceptable to himself as displeasent to his ij corrivals: whereof the one, feedyng hym with the revercion and leavyng of another man, gave hym onely the possession of a shapp and bodey of a woman wythout a hart; and the other, wearye or cloyed with the toile of one kinde of exercise, or not hable any longer to mainteine the skirmishe without freshe supplies, or fearynge, peradventure, the torne of his Fortune (who never yeldes us pleasure without a sharp repentaunce in the ende, if we prevent not her dome by discrecion) was as willynge to resigne the forte as at the first he seamed desyerous to enter the breache. Wheruppon, resolvyng upon an other time for the further consomniacion and plot of their felicitie, they departed, not without signes of secret sorowe, appearyng by the teares standing in their eyes—the one to her husbände (who, wearyng by ignorance a forqued garland, made of the leaves of the tree wherof an other had cooled and cropped the frute, was content with that he founde, and rejoyced in his happy encounter); the other, not without great daunger, retired to Mantua: where, takyng more pleasure in the repeticion of his perils passed then desyerous (without better advise) to

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE V reiterate, or undertake againe, the lyke adventure, he discoursed the whole to his frende Delio; who for his parte, rejoySynge more in the saffe retourne of his frende then commending his wisdom in th'attempt of so rashe and perillous an enterpryse, exclaimed against the detestable rage and furye of love: which, as al antiquities do affirme to be of more force, and infection, then al the ruberbe of Alexandria or Antycyria is eyther hable to heale or delaie the least furie of so uncurable a poyson; so the familiar experience of this age, justifying the protestacion of former time, doth yeld us such diversities of examples, touching the raging disposition of that frantike humour, that we ought not only to shon the aire of such a pestilent plage (no les then the mariner that goth a loofe, and giveth place to, the harde rockes in the daungerous ocean), but also to stande so sewerlye upon our garde, that we seame not once to lysten to th'intisyng sommance, or lewer, of so execrable corruption: who, once takynge possession of the sensible partes within us, besides that he ceaseth not to interrupte our quiett wyth continuall torment and passion, stretcheth yet his power so farr, that he bringes us in case, not only to commit our lyves to manifest perils, forgett the dutye of our conscience, with breache of the commaundement of God, but also (to satisfye the appetit of wanton lubricitie) he makes us corrupt the puritie of the soule with the spott of abhominable adulterye, a syn most apte of all other to incense the vengeance of God against us. Whereof we have sewer proof in the destruction of Sodom and Gomorra, wyth diverse other contreys and common welthes whiche he hath plagued and brought to ruyne for the onely lycencious lyvyng of the people.

DISCOURSE

VI

THE VILLENIE of an ABBOT in seeking to
seduce a mayde by force, and her vertue in
defendyng her honor against him and
his companyons of traison.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE VI

THE ARGUMENT

LIKE as all ages, from the firste foundation of the primyve church, are voide of recorde or remembrance of so greate diversitie in religion as the wickednes of our presente time doth present unto us, so th' oppynions at this daye are not so differente one from an other as th' abuse of the Babylonian or dyabolicall secte of Rome appears so plainely in their detestable trade of livinge, that their owne villanie and frutes of corruption discovereth to the dymnest eyes that be, howe farr they are from the pathe of sincere and true doctrine; and yet, marching unworthelie amongeste the troope of the faithful, are not ashamed to arrogatt unto them selves the title of th' anoynted of the Lorde, wyth protestacion that they only beare the badge of true Christianytie. Wherin, albeit it agreeth not with the taske I have taken in hande eyther to argewe or move question—because bothe the one and the other belonges to the office of the theologian, or devine of learninge and authoritie—yet, seinge a daylye encrease of their disorder, wyth a slacke endeavour of suche as (havinge authorytie to expose unto theym the rodd of reformacion) seame rather pertiall on their behalfe, then readie (accordinge to their dutie) to yelde due punishment to their detestable errour, I maye without offence bowlte out myne opynion touchinge their abhominable trade of lyfe, beinge confirmed chieflie therein wyth infynite examples of lascivious exploites, and other inordinat trade of livinge, in the parsones of such as make semblable profession. And truly as we do but righte to yelde a dutifull reverence to such as be true prelates and pastours of the litle flocke dispersed thorow the worlde, together with a generall zeale to th' order of them that bec called to the sacred sanctuarie; evenso we commit offence, in myne opinion, in belevinge that there is anye honor or commendacion at all due to them whose lives expose more argumentes and proves of infamie then the moste vile and swearinge ruffyan that ever did service to th' impudente curti-

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

VI

san of Rome. Neither is it a seamlye honor or ornamente for the Church of God to see a prelatte, puffed upp with vanitie, jettinge up and downe the streetes upon his foote clothe, attended upon as a satrapas with a traine of dashbucklers or squaringe tospottes, and hym selfe pinked and razed in th' attire of a yonge bridegrome; with hys heare curled by art, fallinge in lockes, as it were by appointment, upon his forheade, with more curyositie then an olde ydoll or ymage of Venus; perfuming the streetes with the smell of muske and amber, whiche he hath conyngely inclosed in the seames of his garmentes. Besides what example of vertue is it, to see one of our reverend religious fathers and governours of coventes, more geven to courte the dames with requestes of sensualitie, then to torne over the leaves of the New Testament, or other sacred institutions left unto us by Christe and his disciples; and emploie more studie in devise to seduce and subborne their neighbors wives and doughters, then to visit their diocesse and defende the sely shepe against the malice of the raveninge wolfe seking to devoure the fewe that be left? Is he worthy to be admitted to feede the flocke, or beare the title of Christes shepherd, that lyves in more adultery, fornycation and dronkenes, then he that makes an only profession of suche evil all the daies of his life? Or how is he hable to reclaime such as be out of the waye to salvacion that detesteth the scripture, delites in wickednes, and preferres absolute examples of the most perentory synne that can bee? Whereof th' Ytalyan Bandell hath drawnen a most true and lyvelye pattorne in the person of a Neapolitaine abbott; whiche I have accompted of necessitie to prefer amongst my volume of discourses, as well to the confucion of hym selfe and such as resemble him in condicion, as to geve worthie glorie to the vertue of a pure virgyn who had her honor in such reputacion, that she sought rather to end her daies in the defence of her chastetie thenne to commit the use of her bodie to the fleshly will of an abbot, more full of villanie thenne perticipatinge with th' office and dutie of a true christian.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

A discription
of Naples
according to
the cronicles
of Tuskan.



Diverse Eng-
lish gentles
men enter-
teined there
at this daye.

ALL men, whose experience by travaile is a wytnes of the singularities of Italye and Spaine, are of opinion I am sewer, that Naples is one of the most riche, pleasante, and populus cities in Europe; bothe for the beautie and fertilitie of the countreye rounde aboute, the magnifical plat and scituacion of the towne, prospectinge with open casementes uppon the heyghte of the highe sea Tyrenum, and also the warlyke garrison of gentlemen of al contreis, lyenge there for the defence of the frontiers, with the civill disposition of the people inhabitynge the sayde paradise. There maye you see a plaine and pleasant champaine, yeldyng a wonderfull solace, wyth her delicate aire breathing uppon suche as use the feildes for wholesome recreation, and noresheth besides all chases of delite necessarie for th'exercise of nobilitie. And he that wysmeth to be pryvie to the pleasure of solitarie places, maye see there the wonderfull arts and industrie of nature, declared in the conveigh of litle hilles or pendells of the carthe, hangyng (as it were) by a frame of geometrye, beawtified on all partes, with an infinitie of orenge, lemons, and other trees odiferous, yeldyng a comoditie and pleasure peculiar to the towne, and generall benefitt to the whole countrey, and straungers passyng that waye, as well by th'intisinge savour of that trees, as sugred taste of the frute. The bottoms of which deliteful groves do discover certeine valleis, no lesse ryche in fruteful graftes and plantes of straung kindes, then the champion, yeldyng a plentiful increase of corne of al sortes; where the meadowe, also, cladd with his grene garmente at al tymes of the yere, is honge continuallie with a tapestrie of all colors of hearbes and flowers, with other liverie of dame Flora; who assystes this heavenly glee in the valleis, with the joystes of sondrie cleare springes, yeldyng at all tymes of the daye a temperat dewe, to take awaie the vehement heate of the son; in suche sorte as the straungers passyng by, imparting

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

VI

of the ayre and wholsomnes of the place by the breathe of a milde zephir, are drawn thether by delite, and forced to repose and refreshe their weary bodyes for a tyme with the solace, whereof those places yelde an indifferent plentie to al men. Besides, he that is desierous to be pertaker of the merveiles of nature, hidden in th'intralles of the earthe, let hym take a boate and visit the ylandes ; where, amongst the wonders that Pozzollo brings furthe, he shall see the hott poddells, from whence distille the baines, so necessarie for the health of man, with the pubbling-troughe or cave of Sibilla, by which, as the poetes fayne, Eneas made his entrey in discendyng into hell to speake with his father. There apperes also a remembrance of th'artificial laborynth of Dedalus, with the sumpteous palleys of the Romaine Lucullus ; whose lodgyngs, with so many crooked turnings and windinges every waye, chapells, and places of solitarie resorte, excedyng (accordyng to the poetes) the computation of man, were swallowed in a momente in the devowrynge throate of Tyrenum, by a soddaine trembling or shakynge of the earth, commonly called an earthequake. Finally, he shalbe there presented, with the secret and most sure lodgings, builded by nature in the belly of the harde rockes, with other wonders in suche infinite number, that onely that place yeldes pleasure sufficient to fede the eye and mynde of man, with more delite then the whole remainder of Europe is hable to furnish. Wherein, I am chiefly moved to note you a particular discription of this paradise, to th'end that, as the places of solemne and solitary regarde do commonly mortefie in men all occasions of wanton exercise, so the planet that governeth those plattes of earthly pleasure, pricking forward our effeminate dispocision, sturreth up the humor of lascivius luste, with an inclinacion more readie to performe the fraile suggestion of the flesh, then provide for the health of the devyne parte of the mynde, which is the sowle. Neyther is our present age so plentiful of vertue or vertuose effectes but the view of our auncestors lives past gives us sufficient cause to blushe and be ashamed, in that we are founde so weake in th'ymytacion of their exploites and exercises of vertue. Wherin, besides an infinitie of examples procedyng

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE VI of the wickednes of our time, I maye be bolde to confirme myne opinion with a familiar experience of an abbot of Naples; whose younge discrecion, equall to the grenes of his yeres, made hym no lesse insufficient to govern the state of his vocation, then unable everye waye to discharge th'offyce wherein he was invested by othe and habitt of religion. For havynge also the consente of noble race (whereof he was descended) to favor the wilfull appetites of his unbridled youthe, he toke more delite to assyste the exercises of nobilitie (I meane in makynge one at all manner of daunces, masques, momeries, dressed for the honour of ladies with covered faces, and other recreations of pleasure, convenient onely for the courtyer) then to sitt in the chapter-house uppon reformations of hys monkes, or to ymploye any parte of hys tyme in the studie of the sacred volumes of the church. He was also admitted a necessarye compagnion to some of the governours and capteines there, for that he kepte an ordynarye table, and free diot for gentlemen; beyng a thyng most acceptable to the Spanyarde, who at hoame kepeth hym within the compasse of thyn and sober chere, and abrode is nothyng inferiour to the devourynge Almayne, resemblynge by that meanes the sparynge order of the nigardes of olde tyme, in their drye and hungrye banquettes. And to the sinne of thys excesses in delicate fare, he added an offence no lesse hainous and moste unseamely for any of his callynge, devidynge the daye into howers, and howers into ymitacion of pleasures. Some tyme he was sene in the streetes in th'attire of a galland or younge courtiour. Some tyme he visited the hauntes and assemblies of ladies, courtyng suche of them as he founde to give moste eare to his ydle talke; neyther respectyng the opynion that passed of his lightnes, touchynge the violacion of the hollye order of hys profession, nor the dishonor he dyd to the house from whence he descended, but gloried rather in that he colde so artificiallye performe the partes of a Philantos, or flatteryng lover, then, in revelyng the misteries of the scripture, to seame to ymitate the true simplicite of lyfe of hys vertuous predecessors in that place. Whereuppon followed ymediatly a declaracion of the vile frute of so vicius a lyfe. For as

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

Monsieur le Moyne passed one daye in great braverye upon
hys footclothe thorowe the fayrest streete of Naples, ex-
posyng a riche shoue by reason of the glee of the gold
smithes shoppes, he glaunced, by chaunce, upon one of the
faireste women (as he thoughte) harbored at that tyme
within the walles. And followynge the pursute of her
beautye, wyth a gredye gase of hys eye, maugre hys harte, he
was forced to a soddayne staye ryghte over agaynste the
place where shee was. Whyche tyme of abode, his eyes
forgot not to imploie in takyng large measure and viewe of
her proporcion every waie ; makinge such reaporte to the
harte and rest of the interiour partes that in one momente
he became assailed with that wherin he was ignoraunt for
experience, and lesse assisted with necessarie resistance ;
feelyng within him a hoat warre betwene the sencesible
partes of reason, and sensuall provocation of the flesh, with
a presente captivitie of his auncient quiet by the common
enemie of the ease of man, which we call properly the pas-
sion of love ; who, at this first encounter, rampired hymselfe
so strongly within the inward partes of this younge abbott
that he onelye governed his thoughtes, and disposed his
doinges altogether by his discretion ; ceassinge not to flatter
his fonde humour wyth instinctes of vaine conceits, til he
broughte hym to the stage to play the last acte of the
comedie, where he received the due guerdon of his follye,
with open shame and rebuke of the multitude. And when
tyme sommoned this religious fondlynge to departe from the
viewe of his newe mistres, he seamed in no lesse paine then
if there had bene presente incision made into his intrailles, to
cut in sonder the stringes where upon hys harte is staide, or
that (accordynge to the poetes) he felte the egle of Promo-
theus peckinge upon his liver. The girle was the daughter
of a goldsmith, no lesse deare to the father then extremelye
beloved of her mother, both for her beauty and promptnes
of wit, and, also, for that in her young yeres appeared suche
argumentes and signes of vertue that she was noted the
paragon and patorne of all degres of her tyme for womanly
behaviour, and nothyng inferiour to the best touching the
chast order and honest conveighe of her lyfe, wherewith she

DISCOURSE
VI

Love a com-
mon enemy
to the ease
of man.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE

VI

beautified the meane discente of her parentes, and lefte a rare example to the ladyes of greater callynge, who thinke their renowme sufficientlye confirmed by the height and honor of their house, without puttinge to the accion and effecte of vertue; which in dede, as it is the badge true nobilitie, so it hath also authoritie to make noble the meanest discent that is. And truly as the vaine woman exalteth her selfe, like to the birdes, whose naturall lightnes conveighe them to the starres (I meane, takes pleasure in the abundance of her riches, preferreth the magnificencie of her house, ymagininge her beautie to be worthie to sytt in the highest theatrey of the world) so the wise woman is glorified only in the gifte of sincere and pure simplicitie, wyth a wonderfull care to kepe her name without spott, and the course of her life so uprighte that the malice of evill tounge maye have no power to enter, and muche lesse perce with any worthie slaunder. But nowe to our Gansaldo and amarous abbot, who, bathing in the lake of his follies, thought as greate ympossibilitie to retire or dismisse this firste alaram, or sommonce of love, as to comprehend all the water of th'occian within a litle urnyall. Neyther wold he dispose hymself to trie the force of any resistance; but determined (at what price soever it wer) to ymparte his passion to the girle; which he ymaged would move in her a consent of reciprocally affection. Herein the opinion of the poet is justified, sayinge, that lovers repose a certie in dreames and proclayme a sewer victorie of th'uncerteine object of their fancie. Like as this fonde abbot, being lymed with a simple looke or glaunce at unwares, doth promisse hymselfe the conquest of the pray, against whom he hath as yet used neyther force nor pollicye, and much lesse dressed any ambush. He forgot not every day in the weke to make his purmenado on horsebacke in the streete wher dwelt the saint to whom he had vowed such solemne devotion. Wherin for a more glorie of him selfe, and the rather to seduce the maide, hee appeared in severall attire and change of horse, twise or thrise a day, not forgettinge in passing by the house of the goldsmith to take measure of the doare, glaunce upon the windowes, and perce with the draw-

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

VI

ing regards of his eye thorow every crevice of the wal, to th' end hee myghte encounter a seconde viewe of her whose fyrst regard had ministred unto him the brothe of infection. And if fortune were content at any time to geve him a syght of her, whether it were at the doare or out of the window, or in other place which denied him favor or libertie to speake to her, I thinke he forgot not to expose arguments of his grefe, by the pitiful regards of his countenance, wanton torninge of the eye, and other messengers of his passion, arguing the torment he endewred for the desier he had to do her service. He understode at last, by secret inquisition, what churche her mother haunted for the performing of her prayers, and that her doughter was her only companion in these devociions; whither also hee directed his pilgrimage; and, dissymulinge with God, hee plaide th'ypocrite, in convertinge his regards from th'alter or place of levacion to beholde the bewtie of the goldsmithes daughter—the saint to whom his hart yelded most honor; making of the house of prayer the shop or forge to frame iniquitie; exceding in this respect the barbarouse abuse of the Etheniques Turkes and infidells, who geve more reverence to their mosques, wher God is blasepheimed and his Son abjured, then the Christians now a dayes to the temples and houses dedicated to the Lord to performe the ministracion of the sacraments, with open publicacion of the wil of our Saviour Christ; whom, wyth Saint Paule, we ought to pray for the subvercion of Babilon, and restauracion of the true Church, dispersed into divers corners of the world by the malice of the pope and his wicked disciples; wherof this abbot, being not the least in authoritie, was nothing inferiour to the most abhominable in al vices. Wherof he gave sufficiente prooffe in two offences of equall detestacion; the one in seking to deflowre a mayde contrarye to the othe of hys religion, the other in abusinge the house of God, as a place of bawdye practise to performe th'effecte of hys cursed devise; beinge more devowte in courtinge the ladies of Naples thenne curious to reforme th'abuses of his ydle covente. But the girle, notinge th'inconstant order of prayer in our reverende father Gonsaldo, together wyth hys wanton regards, full of lasciveous desyer,

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE

VI

ymagined by and by wyth what yron the gentleman was shod, and to what saint hee would gladlye offer his candell. Wherefore, thinkinge it noo breache of good manner to playe mock-hally-day wyth such a maister foole, gave hym skoape now and thenne to behold her at large; and to beat the hammer more depe into his head, would requite his amarous glaunce wyth a semblable glee, and sodaynly retire and vanish out of hys sight wyth an angry farewell, as though shee disdayned his wanton offer; wyth intente, notwithstandinge, to shonne hys voyce and place of presence no lesse then th'incounter of any venemus beaste, fearinge to reapose eyther credytt in hys honestie, or so much assurance in her owne pudicitie, as to open her care to the charme of a frivolous lover, or who thinkes it no offence to take awaye the puritie of a mayde: whom wee maye compare to the red rose, desiered of every one, so longe as the morning dewe mainteineth hym in odyferous smell and pleasaunt coollor, but when the force and heate of the son hath mortyfyed hys oryent hew, and converted his naturall freshnes into a withered leafe, the desier to have it dekaieith wyth the bewtie of the thyng. Evenso shee that hath once morgaged the flower of her virginite, is not only despised of hym to whom shee hath bene so prodigal of that whych shee oughte to make a moste precious jewell, but also in common contempte wyth all men, what showe of dissembled curtesye soever they presente unto her. Wherof the mistres of Gonsaldo was nothing unmyndfull, who, preferringe the honor and reputacion of chastetic, affore all the respecttes of the worlde, seing wythall that the blinde abbot persewed more and more hys amarous quest, prevented hys expedicion by making her a straunger to his presence, shonnyng all places of his repaire, and, to take awaye all occasions that myghte geve increase to his desyer, shee forbore to visit the churches, onelesse it were at suche howers as they were voyde of other companie; and yet wyth suche regarde, that shee made (as it were) a privy searche in all the corners and quyers of the temple, to prevent his subteltie in dressinge some ambushe to invade her uppon a soddaine. And if by chaunce he saw her and saluted her in the streetes, shee crossed saile on the

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

other side, and closed her eyes as agaynst some hurtfull
encownter, yelding hym no other countenance then she
might have avowched to the most infydell in the uttermost
Ilandes of Tartaria. Whych brought the sely freare into
suche mortall perplexitie, that dispaire beganne to appeare,
wyth th'approche of sondrye perentorie diseases, chiefly
for that the hyer of his earnest love was returned with
sondrye sorts of crueltie and disdaineful repulses; occupyinge
his brayne with suche contrarietie of thoughtes, that he was
voide of councell to what saint to vow himselfe, or upon
what wood to make his arrowes; seinge he was neither hable
to mortifye, nor use moderacion in, his passion, and muche
lesse was assisted with any meane to communicate the
greatnes of his greefe to her, whose beautie had made hym
the slave of follie. Wherein, albeit he sawe a vanitie to use
the office of a *Dariolleta*, or bawde—for that the vertue of
the maide argued a detestation of suche ambassadors, and
to write to her appeared a great difficultie, for that she was
always in the presence of her mother, who, usinge the vertue
of her daughter as a solace of her olde yeres, was no lesse
carefull of her honestie then belonged to so precious a jewell
—yet, feelynge a continuall agravation of desyer, wyth a
flatteryng offer of love to rewarde hym in the ende with the
praye of his purseute, he determined to suborne a shameles
mesenger to bewraye his shameful intente; and therefore put
his requeste upon tearmes in a letter of this effecte:—‘ Yf my
destenies had don execution uppon my bodye when firste
they broughte me to the viewe of your beautie, I had not
ben a presente experience of your crueltie, nor you th’occa-
sion of my unworthie torment. For if death by nature had
prevented the begynnyng of my love, I had ben free from
the force of passion, discharged of all mortall greefe, and you
dispensed withal from the imputation and cause of a double
ill: the one to abuse the vertue of your selfe and do wronge
to the renowme of al women by preferring effectes of rigour;
the other in disdaynyng the service of him, whose life and
death payseth indifferently in the ballaunce of your good-
will; dissemblyng also not to see the circumstance of my
love, to drive me to desperacion, and at the point to use

DISCOURSE

VI

The abbot
writeth to
his mistres.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE VI unnaturall force againste myselfe. Howe often, alas ! have I made you pryve to th'inwarde affection of my mynde, by the outwarde regardes and glaunces of my exterior partes ! Howe often have you acknowledged the same by argument of semblable glee, and immediatly denied the whole by a sodaine showe of angrie complexion ; cyther disdayning utterly th'offer of my service, as one unworthie to enjoye the preferment of your favor, or dalyenge wyth my earnest sute, to geve increase to my passion ! I have often bene upon the waye to disclose unto you by mouth the thinge wherin your hart hath alreadye geven judgement of my meaning, albeit the desier not to offende you any waye hath staide th'expedicion of my intent, suspending my grefe till the greatnes of the same hath forced a presente vent, with this simple requeste :—that as fearinge to ymparte the full of so great a matter to so uncerteine a messenger as a peece of paper, so it may please you to geve me credit of my conference, wher only ourselves may be witnesses of that whych I have to discover and am no longer hable to conceile. Wherin, if there be any bonde of consideracion in great ladyes, on the behalfe of the offer of their inferiours, ymagin how justly I deserve well of you ; and wyth what reason you oughte to passe a graunte of so small a favor to hym who is no lesse hable (as you know) to procure your advancement wyth what porcion of wealthe your selfe shall thinke good, then readye to performe all such thinges as you shall but ymagine and wishe to be don. Wherof I sende you a confirmacion herewith, sealed with the othe of my religion, and with protestacion of the faythe and life of your moste loyall and desolate servante,

GONSALDO.'

Love.

He had no soner written this letter, but he was in mynde eftsones to commit it into morsells, or to make it a sacrafice to the fyer, despairing belike of the successe, till at laste the blind guide and fyrst author of his follie, reprehendinge his want of corage, renforced hym to a forwardnes, perswading hym that the beginning was good, and argued a sequeile of contentacion. 'The rather,' saith he, 'for that the tender yeres, wyth small discrecion, preferreth an ignor-

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

VI

ance in the girle of your meaning. And seing accesse and conference be denied, the nexte pollicie is, to use th' advantage of writinge, whyche declareth th' effect of that whyche is painted in the outwarde regardes of the face. The wordes of your letter may also importe such a charme, that her present rigour may be converted into spedie compassion; for as there is conning in enchauntyng, so the misterie can not be wrought without the assistaunce of words.' Which foolishhe suggestion restored the abbot to a hope. And making conscience to commit the conveigh to the credit of anye of his covent, for that he doubted their wisdom in performinge so secret an embassage, used th' expedicion by one of the vallettes of his chamber; whom, after he had put in remembraunce, of th'auncient favors he had used on his behalfe, and howe much he reposed for hymselfe in the assurance of his fidelitie, he said he was nowe to employe his faythe and diligence in a busynes of no lesse value then the price of his life. 'Wherin,' sayeth he, 'albeit thou maiest conster some part of my meaning by the circumstance of the late chaunge and alteracion thou haste noted in me, judgyng, peradventure, the same to procede of some amarous humour, yet, althoughe I consente and make good the conceite of thy fancie in that surmise, thow, nor all the devinours of the worlde, can name her, who (as thou seest) hath made me the slave of her beautie. This is the secret wherin I am to make a last experience of thy indeavour and wisdom; to make a presente of theis letters to her, who hath not yet vouchesaffed to lende me the use of one simple regarde of favor to qualifye the heate of my burnynge martyrdom.' Wherewith he told him the name of his mistres, the streete and signe wher her father dwelte, with strait commandement in the ende not to omitt any moment or offer of time that might seame to further the execution of his charge. The vallet, glad to have so good a meane to make declaration of his loyal zeale towards his maister, admitted the enterpryse, and gave hym assurance of his diligence, willyng him in the meane while not to loose corage. 'For that,' saith he, 'there is no fortresse so wel defended, but at length it is rendred by composicion, or won by assaulte.'

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE

VI

Wherewith the abbot departed to his chamber, flattering himself with the promise of his man, who, desirous to relive the distresse of his maister, added such diligence to the dispathe of his commission that the nexte daie he founde the meanes to accoste Parolyna, occupyed al alon in her meditacions in the church; where, presenting himself afore her with more assurance then the passioned abbot, gave her the reverence of his countrey, and desiered her not to dismay, if, upon so small acquaintance, he discharged so boldlye the parte of a familiar messenger. 'Wherein,' sayeth he, 'if there be offence, I preffer (good madam) for my excuse my lord and maister.' Upon whose behalfe, he craved so muche favour as to reade his letter; which, after he had kissed wit great humilitey, offred to the chaste mayde: who, knowyng the messenger, for that she had seen hym often follow the traine of Gonsaldo, gave judgement also of the cause of his commynge. Wherefore she did not only refuse it; but also, with certeine tearmes of reproche, returned hym with an answer contrarie to th' expectation of hym selfe and contentment of hym that sent hym. 'What,' sayeth she, 'doth your maister accompte me of such simplicitie, that I have not longe since discerned th'intent of his follie? Doth he thinke that I am any other then one that settas as deare a price of mine honor as the best ladye in Italy? Or is he of opinion that the respect of his authoritie, or greatnes in degree, can force me the rather to a remorce on the behalf of his wicked meaning? No! no! tel him I have neither to do with hym, and lesse cause to accepte his letters. Neyther oughte he to adresse such embassages to me; who can, nor will not, be thankfull to any in love, but such as my parentes shall give me in lawful mariage. Is this his masque of holynes, to cover so greate a villanie under the habit or shroude of simplicitie? What argument of vertue is this in him, whose office is to prescribe principles of honest lyfe? Can he discharge the othe of his religion in seking to corrupt the puritie of virgins and expose an example of the greatest villanie that is? Let hym besiege the forte that is as gladde to yelde as he readie to sammon; and bestowe his charmes and letters upon those,

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

whose regarde and care of honor is equall to the malice of his meaning. And, for your part, let it suffice you that I pardon your first follie; and ceasse hensfurthe to procede any further, least you be payde with the monie ordeyned to discharge the hyer of suche messengers.' Wherewith she flonge oute of the churche, and, not without some passion of juste anger, repaired to her fathers house, not ympartynge anye parte of th'accident to any one of her parentes, trustynge that as her desier and intente was to live in the trade of an honest woman, so God woulde assiste her vertuous respecte, and defende her chastetie agaynst the malice of the wycked. She douted to discover the case to her mother, for feare some slaunder woulde have followed: neyther durste she imparte it to th'olde man, leaste in complainynge of the wronge, his povertie hadde beene founde to weake to contende agaynste th'authoritie of th'abbot, and by that meanes to have beene worse delte withall then cyther he deserved or she desiered; but leaving an example to al women, to use like modestie in semblable distresses, shee committed her selfe and cause to the protection of the heavens. By this time the valiant messenger of Gonsaldo was returned to his maister, communicinge not onelye the perticularities of his aunswere, the disdain she showed to his letters, and small accompte she seamed to make of the offer of his good wil, but also perswaded to correct the humour of his appetite, and dismissee the remembrance of her beautie, bestowinge his affection uppon some such as hathe more discrecion to yelde hym consideracion, then the folish daughter of a simple artisan. Which reaport, albeit brought an increase of doble passion to the martiredom of the poore abbot: bothe for that the termes of her aunswere argued an agravacion of her creweltie, and absolute dispaire hereafter to enjoy the benefit of her good wil. Yet he had the gift to dissimule th'inward panges of his grefe with a wonderfull patience, converting his humour of fretting mallencolie into tearmes of sorowful exclamacion, in this sorte:—' Ah!' saith he, 'I see wel thou arte ignorant in the forces of love, who is not easely suplanted after he hath once conquered the rampier of the harte. Neyther arte

DISCOURSE

VI

Th' exclamacion of the abbot.

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE VI thou privie to the operacion of his pilles; who, differynge from the nature of other passions, assailynge the mynde of man, doe make us desyer that we can not gett, and love the thynges whiche hate us mortallye. And is not this a sufficient experience of the perversitie of women, seinge the more I indeavour to preferre my service to my cruell Parolyna, the lesse accompte she makes of myne offer; and the more I languishe in desyer, the greater pleasure takes she in my martiredome; that I wishe, alas, that some oyle of holye thombe, mighte presently close mine eyes againste the lighte of this world, or els the vertue of some happie enchauntment, distillinge from the arbour and pot of som Elysea, mighte with spede remove the vaile of her rigour, and sturr up an humor of compassion to the reliefe of my painefull tormente. I see thy advise is justified every waye by reason, and when I dispose my selfe to followe thy counceyl, I feele within me (I know not what) which forceth my wil wyth constrainte to pursue the sommance of mine appetite, in suche sorte that the voice whiche uttered the repulse hath also pronounced the fatall sentence of my lyfe.' Wherin he had yet proceded, but that the pangēs of inwarde sorowe, compellynge the conduites of waterye humours to discover them selves, forced a vente at his eyes in greate abundanee of teares; whiche, drownynge the wordes of furder discourse in his mouth, moved his vallet also to equal dolor; who, notwithstandinge, preferred suche consolacion to his maister as sorowe woulde give hym leave to utter, with a franke offer to pawne his lyfe, with the rest of his worldlye porcion, to redeme the quiete of the abbott, and put hym in possession of her whome he accompted the sufferayne *cataplame* for his mortall disease. Wherewith he comforted eftesones the selye Gonsaldo; who, tellynge hym that after he had gott the consent of convenient tyme and oportunitie, he woulde somon hym to an effect of his promisse, dismissing therewith his faithfull servant, and retirynge hymselfe to a simple comforte in this laste resolucion, for certeine dayes forbearē to visit the streetes, churches, or other places, where afore he was wonte to make his offeryngs and purmenadoes; thinkynge in shonnyng the places of her repaire

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

and presence, he shoulde at laste force a forgetfulnes of her beautie. Wherein, notwithstandinge, he seamed to sprinkle water uppon hoate cinders, and brought more oyle to his matche: and all hys traveile therin sturred upp a freshe supplie of drawing baites, movinge an encrease of desyer, wyth augmentation of his follie, whiche after he assaide to putt in execution. For the more he wente aboute to roote oute the remembrance of her beautye, the more suerly dyd love imprinte her picture in the bottome of his harte, with provocation not to give over the queste, but procede in the pursute of so pleasant a praye. In the daye the whole cloisture or circute of his abbaye cold skarcelye comprehend the sondrie ymaginations of hys braine: and his bed in the nighte presented hym wyth as muche reste as he that is bounde to treade continually the laborinth of endles toile. Wherin, ravinge thus in a passion of contrarietye of thoughtes, he accused hym selfe of cowardnes, for that the offer of so fainte a resistance, made hym retire his force, without gyvyng a more hoate assaulte to the place he ment to conquere. Wherewith, remembryng howe often he had harde, that women, what desyer so ever they have of them selves to be thankeful to him that courts them with the offer of love, yet take they, notwythstandyng, a singler pleasure to be assailed with importunities intermedled with a lytle constrainte or force, determined to imploye th'uttermost of his forces, and to paye hym selfe (maugre her resistance) the hier of his traveile wyth the moste precious jewell or treasure she had, at suche tyme as Fortune would gyve hym the favour of a convenient tyme and place to levy the last alaram; thynkyng, with the advantage of his pollicie, to compell her to treade the daunce which she never mente to practise if not in lawfull mariage. Here you maye note a familiar experience, that he that is in love, albeit he be blynde touchinge the knowledge of reason, yet, for the devise and execution of a follye, he hath more eyes then he whome the poetes affirme to have an hundreth lightes for the garde of Jupiter's cove. For that this folishe Abbot, attendyng daiely an offer of commoditie and advantage of tyme to gyve a charge uppon his plainsante enemye at

DISCOURSE

VI

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE

VI

unwares, used suche diligent watch to discrye her doinges, that he was made privie to the certeine hower wherein she was determined to attende upon her parentes to a fearme or graunge they had, not the moste parte of a league from the cite. In whiche oportunitye and offer of thankefull tyme, the blinde abbot reposed a singler commoditie of his cause : for that, as you have harde, he determined to invade her wyth an ambushe at unwares, and so ravishe her out of the handes of her parentes by mayne strengthe. Whereunto he added an effecte, without regarde to the slaunder whiche attended so wicked an enterprise, or th'abuse he committed againste the order of his religion, and muche lesse the estimation and honor of the house whereof he was discended.

Let this experience suffice to confute the opinion of the most of our lovers nowe a dayes ; who, makynge a god of the ydoll of love, do not lett to give hym place amonge the moste perfect and heroicall vertues that are ; affirmynge that all civilitye and curteys behaviour amongst men is derived of the discipline taughte in his skoole. Let the effect of his rage, I saye, declare his disposicion, and be the equall judge whether he be an indifferent evill or a pertiall vice. For, settinge your partycular affections aparte, I knowe you wyll confyrme myne opinion thus farre, that he whiche you cal love, and woulde that we honor hym wyth a tyle of a god, and give him a power more then humaine, is no other thinge then a brutall passion of the minde, derived of that parte whiche nature hath made comon to us with beastes, touchynge sensualitye ; and he which laboreth in the disease of that follie is in no other degree then he that is possessed with the spirite of fransie and desperation. Looke in the seconde booke of the Kynges, and tell me what planet or spirite governed Amnon, the son of David ; who, doatynge upon the beautie of hys owne sister, made no consience to deflower her, and take awaye her chastetie. Whiche horrible acte woulde have procured terrour to the moste mortall enemye, both for the horror and detestacion of the syn, and also for the honor and reverence which all men oughte to gyve to the chastetie of a mayde. The prince of Sichein, being extremely enamored upon the

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

VI

beautie of the daughter of Jacob, dyd it suffice hym onely to love her, in honeste sorte? Did he staye hym selfe uppon your masqued and dyssymuled loyaltie? No! he dyd that which is judged tollerable to you al, and woulde be comon to moste of you, yf the rigour of the lawes had you not in awe, and preferred a feare of tormentes and worthy punishmentes—he ravished her by force. Whereuppon followed the ruine of hym selfe and subversion of his people. For ende, yf there be any one amongst you that absteyneth from lyke violacion, I thinke (sewer) he is not stricken with th'extremetie of love, but that hys mynde hath tasted but a simple impression of that follie; seyng that he that is touched to the quycke, can hardly refraine from execution of like villainies. Amongest whom, notwithstanding, I comprehend not th'integretie of them whose wills tende to do honor to the hollye bedd of mariage, without violacion (for that I am perswaded those affections procede from above, and approved by God hym selfe) but I inveighe againste their unhoneste desiers, who respect nothing but the pleasure in that wherein Mars and Venus strove for the maisterie, at suche tyme as Vulcan discovered theyr naked bodies: which I can not terme so properly in our vulgare phrase, as the Frencheman includes in thies three wordes, *Le don d'amoureuse mercy*; the delite whereof dekeyng with the ende of th'act, maketh them loath the thing wherin earste they tooke singler pleasure. Here you may see also a worthie example in this maister abbott, who, of a pastour and shepherde of the hearde, becomes a devowrer of the principal shepe in his flocke; and leaving th'abit and attire of religion, is invested th'accotrementes of a villaine and dysposicion of a barbarus tyrant, that hathe neyther knowledge of God, nor feare of hys lawes. Wherein my conscience wolde serve me to use a further discourse, touchyng th'abuses in theis ypocrytes, savyng that (God be prayسد!) our realme is happely purged of suche filth, and replenished with a plentifull crewe of th'undowted and faithfull mynisters of Godes worde. Neyther will I troble my historie with the sondry enormities and practises of hell whyche I noted in some religius houses in Fraunce, duryng my being there, because my theame at this tyme is

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE

VI

not to treat of th' abuses in their religion; neyther am I assisted with sufficient time; for that yf I should but abridge their disorders into a tenth parte, the volume wold excede the bignes of the bible. Wherefore it shall suffice me to desier God in my praier to remove the vaile of their darkenes in tyme, leaste their iniquitie procure hym to thonder lyke desolation uppon theym as he dyd uppon the children of Israell, when they forsake hym, and bowed downe to ymages, whereof their owne handes were the carpenters.

And nowe to the sequeyle of Don Gonsaldo, who, harpyng onely uppon the stryng of hys damnable resolucion, imparted th' enterpryce to his man, who (as you have harde) engaged his faith to be the minister of hys wil in what respect he thoughte good to ymploye hym. And havynge eftesomnes preferred a repeticion of his promisse wyth an assurance by othe of th' uttermoste he was hable to do, th' abot told him that, within fewe dayes, his mistres went to performe a banquet with her father and mother oute of the cite. 'To whome,' sayeth he, 'seyng I have forgott no experience or importunitie whiche humanitie can devise, and seyng that in the enjoyng of her beautie consistes the continuance or diminucion of my dayes, I am determyned to retire to the benefit of my laste refuge; whyche is to employe th' uttermoste of my forces, in usynge her by mayne encounter, uppon the waye betwene the towne and her fathers graunge in the country. Wherin, as thou hast alreddie assured me of thy helpe by the othe and religion of thy faith, so thou muste straine thyselfe to procure a further ayde of suche companions as thou accomptes necessarye to assiste th' expedicion; to th' ende that, when the matter shall be broughte to the tryvall of force, we be not founde to weake in the dispatche of our entrepryse; whyche, albeit maye importe unto the, and suche as thou shalte subborne for thy companions in this case, bothe a grudge of conscience, and feare to fall into the rigour of the lawes, yet thou arte not ignorant that th' authoritie of my profession is sufficient to dispense and absolve the synne, and my power hable to prevaile above th' extremitie of justice, in this, or any other respecte, of what importance soever it appeare. Neyther

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

VI

will I sticke to deffraye the whole plate and treasure of my abbeye in defence of the quarrell agaynste the whole state and senate of Naples.' Wherwith he dismissed his manne, who with the pleasante platt of hys tounge, and prodigall promises of liberall hyer, was furnished ymediatlye of hys trayterus crewe to betraye th' innocent mayde; who, for her part, seing Gonsaldo hadde discontinued hys mosters in the strete, and hawnte to the churche where she is wonte to performe her devocion, thoughte he hadde also disclaymed the vehemencie of his passion, with intente no more to pursue her. Wherein as she accompted her selfe moste free from perill, so she founde an approche and offer of daunger whych affore she was not hable to ymagyn. For that th' abbott, beyng advertised by hys espiells of the daye and hower when the mayde shoulde go into the countrey, measured so ryghtlye his tyme with the momente of her departure, that, some one or two howers affore, he somoneth his conspiratours, and goeth oute of the towne, not in his frears weede or attire of his profession, but disguised in suche sorte, as he was not knowen to any but the ministers of his intente; whom he bestowed in ambushe, in an unknowen coverte, joynyng to the path by the whych the goldsmith and his doughter shold passe; who, thynkyng upon nothyng but the plaisante regardes whyche the freshe and grene feeldes dydd yelde, and muche lesse ymagenyng anye secrett practise or villanie conspired agaynste them, entred with greate delite into the pathe of their misfortune. For neare unto Naples there roneth a litle river, descendyng from certeine rockes, givynge necessarye moysture to the valley neare the towne, whiche the poete Sanazaro in hys *Archadia* calleth Sebeth, devydyng her selfe into two armes harde under the walls: whereof the one, fallyng into certeine pipes of lead, becomes serviceable by the arte of man to th' inhabitantes of Naples; the other, stretchyng towards the champaine, refresheth as she passeth the meadowes and cornefeldes adjoyninge, with the dewe of her silver streames, and in the ende, yeldyng tribute to the greate flude Thetys, fauls with a softe noise into the sea, who receiveth her with an embrasyng worthie for so plaisante a neyghbour. Over which river is

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE VI builded a bridge, passible for horse and man, called Madalyne bridge, shrowded with the branches and longe spraires of certeine willowes, growynge on eyther side the broke, the commoditie of whych straitte, with th'advantage of the place offred them selves (as it were) to assiste the enterpryce of th'abbot in th'incounter of his pleasant enemy; who, disposed to more joye then her weary parentes, went alwaies affore them, supplieng the time and tediousnes of their travaile, with sondrye plaisante devises. And as the heate of the day, with th'exercise of her body in goinge, had sett a broche the vaines of good blod through all her parts; wherby, to the pure complexion and white of her face, was added an orient die of red, so her heare, of the coollor of amber, curled by nature, and fallinge in lockes uppon her forehead, covered as then with an *escarfion* of the fashion of Pyemount, gave suche an increase to her beautie, that, wyth the helpe of the shade and shadowe of the tres, pausinge the vyolence of the son, with the glee of the pleasante streame assistinge the naturall white and redd in her face, her eyes glistering as the cleare starres in the loftie skie, made her seame nothinge inferiour to the perfection of her whom the poetes have crowned wyth the title of a goddesse and quene of bewtie. Wherin, if this bravery of Parolina gave greate delite to the olde yeres of her parentes, who knewe the argumentes of youthfull joye whyche appeared in their daughter where but reeracions to mortefye in theym the wearines of the waye, it was nothinge in respecte to the pleasure of Gonsaldo; who, beholdinge the bewtie of his mistres, resemblinge afar of one [of the *nymphes*, affirmed by Ovide to attende the goddess Diana goinge on huntinge, felt in him selfe a newe increase or supplie of desier, in such sorte that if hee had but the flea in his eare afore, it is nowe that he standes uppon thornes till he have geven a charge uppon the praye whiche seames so plesant of taste. And swearinge by the god of hys religion, not to lose the benefit of so sweate a morsell, began to encorage his men to dispose theym selves to performe the cause of theyr coming; warninge theym, notwithstandinge, in speciall sorte, to absteyne from vyolence agaynste the mayde. 'And albeit,

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

VI

sayeth hee, 'the father is unarmed of any weapon, savinge his shorte wood knife, yet I am sewer, he will put himselfe in endeavor to reskewe his daughter. Wherefore, whilst some are grapplinge wyth the girle, the rest maye kepe the olde man occupied wyth terror and wordes of threatening feare.' Wherwyth, he cried to th' assalte. When ymediatly th' ambushe discovered theym selves, and in a moment envyroned the selly maide on al partes, with theyr swordes drawn, offringe to laye handes upon her and carie her to their maister. The miserable parentes seinge theym at pointe to departe wyth the only pillor and proppe of their old yeres, ymagyning th' attempte to ymporte an effecte of greate mischiefe, retired to th' ordinarie armes and defenses of age, which were pitifull cries; which the villaines appaised ymediatly wyth threates of present death if they would not cease their doleful brute. And, for a more terror to the selly goldsmith, some of them helde the pointe of hys sworde to his throate; who, notwithstanding, kept his daughter faste in his armes. And the mother would not bee dissevered from her childe, desieringe the traitors to discharge their crueltie uppon her and geve her daughter the favor of a safe libertie. But the more the desolate parentes filled their eares with requestes of compassion, the lesse pitie appered in the tyrantes, and greater desier grew in the ravynous abbot. What harte colde refrayne to distil droppes of blode on the behalfe of the desolation of these three wretched creatures; the father out of breathe and halfe dead wyth the force of skrichinge cries; the mother equall pertaker of his desaster and exceding her husband in sorow; the maide, more assured then her parentes in the conflicte of this misfortune, was at the pointe to use force agaynste her selfe, rather then to falle into the handes of th' execucioners of her pudicitie? I am sewer never a ladie of you all, reading this dollorous discourse, can abstaine from tearmes of detestacion agaynst the infamous and disordered desier of this disciple of Sathan; neyther conceile th' argument of compassion, seinge the virginite of this mayde hangyng by so slender a fyllet, and readie to be offred, by compulcion, uppon the alter of fylthye ymmolacion, to glot

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE VI the lascivious thurst of this ravynous apostat; who, masqued in a visorne and wede of simplicitie, supported also by a coollour of fayned devocion, studieth nothings but to pray upon the honor of widowes, abuse the absence of the married man by corrupting hys wife, and subborn by inorderly meanes to seduce the chastetie of maides. But now to our Parolyna; who, as shee knewe the cause of this alaram to procede of her onlye, and, seinge the force of th'assailantes, had committed alreadie her parentes as it were into sewer warde of their power, and finding withall an ympossibilitie in her selfe to resiste the strengthe of the rest, determyned yet to supplie the defence of her honor wyth the benefit of a vertuous and valyaunt pollicie. Wherefore, chaungeinge in a moment the amazed glee of complexion in her face into a regarde of assured joye, addressed her to th'abbot, wyth request that, afore she performed th'effecte of his desier, he wolde lende her his sworde. 'For no other entent,' saith she, 'but that my handes only may chasten the rigour of mine olde father, whose crabbed age, ignorante of civilitie, hath beene hitherto th'only ympediment and staie of my goodwill to yelde you the hier and consideracion of your love; assuringe you that, upon the receite of the fyrst assurance of your affection towards me, I got the consent of my mother to be thankefull in sorte you required mee. And nowe if he should live, and witnes the consomacion of both our desiers, hys contynuall complaintes wold procure grevous punishment of th'offence, to the open slaunder of us both.' Wherwith th'olde man gyving undoubted credit to the dyssymuled discourse of hys daughter, the rather for that he noted no difference in her countenance and famylier conference to th'abbot, cried out againste th'iniquitie she used to his honeste life passed, and present wrong she did to the vertue of his hoarie yeres; and, not knowing the meaning or misterie of her pollicie, forgat no termes of reproche or rigorous rebuke against his chast daughter. Of whose good will, Gonsuldo, beinge more then halfe assured, both for the small regarde she used to the threatning wordes of her father, and also the flattering tearmes of consent by her owne mouth, no lesse glad of the victorie then if he had

TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

DISCOURSE

VI

alreadie passed the offer of al perills, performed the request of her who desiered nothing lesse then the death of her father and life of th'abbot. And putting his naked sworde into the hand of the coragious girle, offering withal to embrace her, as though the conquest wer alreadie performed, she flonge from hym in great rage, willing him to retire as he made accompte of his life. 'For,' sayth she, 'thou counterfeit ypocryte, yf thou offer estesones to laye thy ravenous handes upon me, thyne owne sworde shall geve the blowe of deadly vengauce to the fatall course of thy cursed dayes.' Wherupon, she addressed her to her father halfe dead of a frettinge anger, and purging hys collerike conceites agaynste her, tolde him he was not the father of a doughter that would justefie the glorie of his life passed wyth small vertue, and much lesse further his death by th'infamous renowme of her life; neyther do the thinge, eyther by accords or compulcion, that should have power to sturr up the blodd of shame in his face in what companie soever he came. 'But,' sayth shee, 'the mightie hande of God, restoringe thy weake age to a doble strengthe, and me to a perfecte skill in the use of this sworde which I have conquered of our common enemy, shal defende our honor agaynste the force of these rakshells, who seke to deprive me of the jewell of my reputacion.' Wherwith, she florished here and there, bestowinge her blowes with such skill to the disadvantage of her enemye, that who hadde sene her desperat dealing wyth the sworde, would have judged that shee hadde bene traded in the only exercise of armes all the dayes of her life. Whiche stroke such suddaine corage and joye into the dead hart of her olde father, that he advowed his life in the honest quarell of his doughters chastetie; and likewise the careful mother gave assistance to the magnanimitie of her childe, accordinge to her feble force; whyche so occupied the place for a tyme that th'olde man, and the two ympes derived of the blodd of th'ancient Amazons, laide so harde to the charge of the monke and his souldiours, that in one instant the whole ambush of traitors was out of breathe. But Gonsaldo, knowyng by this laste deceite of the maide that there was neither love

GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE VI nor frendly meanyng in her, began to convert his affection into an humor of fury, commaunding the sworde to bee taken out of the handes of the new champion, wyth expresse charge, notwithstanding, to use no violence agaynste her. Whewyth the medley grewe ymediatlye soo hoate on bothe sides, that the father, to defende the honor of hys daughter, used no care to his owne savegard; and the daughter, to prevent the violence of her bodie, was desperat of her life. The abbot on th'other syde, seinge there was no waye to prevent his perill but by the overthrowe of his enemyes, gave ende to the conflicte by th'extremitie of force, leavinge the aged parentes on grownde maymed and halfe deade with the number of mortall woundes. But the daughter, lightly hurte in the arme, seinge that the wante of strength wolde yelde her prisoner at last to the enemye of her honor, thinkinge nothinge lesse, notwithstanding, then to satisfie his desier any way then by her deathe, used the benefit of her fortune and at unwares reached Gonsaldo a greate blowe thwarte the face, making a blodie podell, or bayne for flees in the sommer, uppon the nose of mayster abbot. Wherwith, holdinge the pointe of her sworde in her hande, cryinge uppon th'aide of th'almightie—to whom, according to the shortnes of her tyme, she commended the healtie of her soule—she leapte from above the bridge into the cristal waves of the cleare Zebete, chosinge rather to builde her tombe within the bellye of some fyshe or monster of the sea, then to yelde a forcible offering of the firste frutes of her virginie to the polluted ymage, or ydoll, of the Synagoge of Babylon. But God, not willinge as yet to deprive the worlde of so rare a mirror of vertue, gave her such force agaynste the rage of the streame, that she kept breath til certeine passengers, leaping into the river, recovered her wyth diligence of swymminge, and brought her on live to the shore; deserving better the benefit of longer life then the papistical monke, who, seing the ende and successe of his enterprise, retired into his abbaie wyth his scorched face, wythout showing hymself any more in the stretes of Naples upon his sturring jennetts, for the love of his lady.

BINDING SECT. APR 3 1981

Robarts Library

DUE DATE:

1 FEB 1999

Fines 50¢ per day

Please return books to the
Library to which they belong

For Touch Tone telephone
renewals call 971-2400

Hours:

Mon. to Fri. 8:30 am to midnight

Saturday 9 am to 10 pm

Sunday 1 pm to 10 pm

For telephone renewals

PQ
4606
Z34
1898
V.1

Bandello, Matteo
Certain tragical
discourses of Bandello

18

